

THE DOCTRINE
OF
THE HOLY SPIRIT.

The Ninth Series of the Cunningham Lectures, 1882

BY

GEORGE SMEATON, D.D.,

PROFESSOR OF EXEGETICAL THEOLOGY, NEW COLLEGE, EDINBURGH.

EDINBURGH

T. & T. CLARK, 38 GEORGE STREET.

1882.

Christians therefore are lights that have the oil in themselves, that is, “the fruits of righteousness.” But if they are not lighted up from the light of the Godhead in themselves, they are nothing. The Lord was a burning light through the Spirit of the Godhead abiding substantially in him, and inflaming his heart according to his human part. — MACARIUS, Homilies. XVIII. § 2

Source: <https://archive.org/details/thedoctrineofthe00smeauoft>

*Roman numerals were converted to Arabic in verse citations
and a number of scanning errors were corrected, 6/11/2015.*

EXTRACT DECLARATION OF TRUST.

MARCH 1, 1862.

I, WILLIAM BINNY WEBSTER, late Surgeon in the H.E.I.C.S., presently residing in Edinburgh — Considering that I feel deeply interested in the success of the Free Church College, Edinburgh, and am desirous of advancing the Theological Literature of Scotland, and for this end to establish a Lectureship similar to those of a like kind connected with the Church of England and the Congregational body in England, and that I have made over to the General Trustees of the Free Church of Scotland the sum of £2000 sterling, in trust, for the purpose of founding a Lectureship in memory of the late Reverend William Cunningham, D.D., Principal of the Free Church College, Edinburgh, and Professor of Divinity and Church History therein, and under the following conditions, namely — *First*, The Lectureship shall bear the name, and be called, 'The Cunningham Lectureship.' *Second*, The Lecturer shall be a Minister or Professor of the Free Church of Scotland, and shall hold the appointment for not less than two years, nor more than three years, and be entitled for the period of his holding the appointment to the income of the endowment secured by the General Trustees, it being understood that the Council after referred to may occasionally appoint a Minister or Professor from other denominations, provided this be approved of by not fewer than Eight Members of the Council, and it being further understood that the Council are to regulate the terms of payment of the Lecturer. *Third*, The Lecturer shall be at liberty to choose his own subject within the range of Apologetical, Doctrinal, Controversial, Exegetical, Pastoral, or Historical Theology, including what bears on Missions, Home and Foreign, subject to the consent of the Council. *Fourth*, The Lecturer shall be bound to deliver publicly at Edinburgh a Course of Lectures on the subjects thus chosen at some time immediately preceding the expiry of his appointment, and during the Session of the New College, Edinburgh; the Lectures to be not fewer than six in number, and to be delivered in presence of the Professors and Students under such arrangements as the Council may appoint; the Lecturer shall be bound also to print and publish, at his own risk, not fewer than 750 copies of the Lectures within a year after their delivery, and to deposit three copies of the same in the Library of the New College; the form of the publication shall be regulated by the Council. *Fifth*, A Council shall be constituted, consisting of (first) Two Members of their own body, to be chosen annually in the month of March, by the Senatus of the New College, other than the Principal; (second) Five Members to be chosen annually by the General Assembly, in addition to the Moderator of the said Free Church of Scotland; together with (third) the Principal of the said New College for the time being, the Moderator of the said General Assembly for the time being, the Procurator or Law Adviser of the Church, and myself, the said William Biddy Webster, or such person as I may nominate to be my successor : the Principal of the said College to be Convener of the Council, and any Five Members duly convened to be entitled to act notwithstanding the non-election of others. *Sixth*, The duties of the Council shall be the following: — (first), To appoint the Lecturer and determine the period of his holding the appointment, the appointment to be made before the close of the Session of College immediately preceding the termination of the previous Lecturer's engagement; (second), To arrange details as to the delivery of the Lectures, and to take charge of any additional income and expenditure of an incidental kind that may be connected therewith, it being understood that the obligation upon the Lecturer is simply to deliver the Course of Lectures free of expense to himself. *Seventh*, The Council shall be at liberty, on the expiry of five years, to make any alteration that experience may suggest as desirable in the details of this plan, provided such alterations shall be approved of by not fewer than Eight Members of the Council.

PREFACE.

I FOUND it necessary in the preparation of this Course of Lectures to travel over a field of vast extent, and the subject has on this account taken shape in my hands rather as a general survey of Theology from the view-point of the doctrine of the Holy Spirit, than as an exhaustive exposition of any single topic. To this course I was shut up by the fact that attention could not be limited to only one or two departments of the subject, and because a selection could not satisfactorily be attempted. I have endeavoured, therefore, to take a survey of the doctrine of the Holy Spirit from the various points of view commended to our attention by the testimony of Scripture on the one hand, and by the results of theological discussion, as well as by the ecclesiastical history of the doctrine, on the other. This has given a threefold division to the work, and a threefold distribution of its subject-matter.

To bring out these three aspects of the topic, it seemed necessary, IN A FIRST DIVISION, to survey the Biblical testimony in the Old and New Testament, or to furnish such a sketch as would show that the doctrine of the Holy Spirit was sufficiently exhibited and apprehended from the first dawn of Revelation, though it was fully displayed only on the day of Pentecost. Then follows, IN A SECOND DIVISION, a brief outline or sketch of the positive truth accepted by the

x.

Church, or the form in which the Church dogmatically holds the doctrine. This is contained in the six Lectures which required to be formally prepared. As this was still felt to be incomplete without a Historical survey of the discussions connected with the doctrine of the Holy Spirit, I have subjoined, IN A THIRD DIVISION, a condensed history of the doctrine from the Apostolic age to the present time.

May the Holy Spirit, whose personality and work this treatise is intended to exhibit, condescend to accept and bless it to the glory of a Three-One God.

GEORGE SMEATON.

1st October 1882.

CONTENTS

Original page breaks and numbers are displayed in the text

PREFACE.....	3
FIRST DIVISION.....	5
INTRODUCTORY DISSERTATION.	9
I. <i>THE BOOKS OF MOSES AND JOB.</i>	9
MAN MADE TO BE THE TEMPLE OF THE HOLY GHOST.	9
II. <i>FROM THE TIME OF MOSES TO DAVID.</i>	14
III. <i>FROM THE RISE OF DAVID TO THE EXILE.</i>	16
IV. <i>FROM THE BEGINNING OF THE EXILE TO THE END OF THE OLD TESTAMENT CANON.</i>	22
THE TESTIMONY TO THE SPIRIT IN THE GOSPELS AND BOOK OF ACTS.....	24
THE EFFUSION OF THE SPIRIT ON PENTECOST.....	28
THE TESTIMONY TO THE SPIRIT IN THE APOSTOLICAL EPISTLES.	32
THE TESTIMONY OF THE APOSTLE PAUL.	33
THE TESTIMONY OF JAMES.	47
THE TESTIMONY OF PETER.	48
THE TESTIMONY OF THE APOSTLE JUDE.	49
THE TESTIMONY OF THE APOSTLE JOHN.....	50
SECOND DIVISION.....	52
LECTURE 1. THE PERSONALITY AND PROCESSION OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.	52
<i>ON THE PROCESSION OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.</i>	57
<i>THE DEITY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT BASED ON THE PROCESSION.</i>	59
LECTURE II. THE WORK OF THE SPIRIT IN THE ANOINTING OF CHRIST.	63
LECTURE III. THE WORK OF THE SPIRIT IN THE INSPIRATION OF PROPHETS AND APOSTLES... ..	74
LECTURE IV. THE SPIRIT'S REGENERATING WORK ON THE INDIVIDUAL.....	87
<i>THE SAYINGS OF JESUS ON THE SPIRIT'S WORK IN REGENERATION.</i>	90
LECTURE V. ON THE SPIRIT OF HOLINESS.	108
LECTURE VI. THE WORK OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN THE CHURCH.....	121
THIRD DIVISION.....	134
HISTORICAL SURVEY OF THE DOCTRINE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT	134
HISTORIC SURVEY OF THE DOCTRINE OF THE PROCESSION OF THE SPIRIT.	146
<i>THE WORK OF THE SPIRIT.</i>	151
<i>THE PERIOD OF THE REFORMATION.</i>	159
I — INDEX TO TEXTS ELUCIDATED.	191
II — INDEX TO SUBJECTS AND WRITERS,	193

THE DOCTRINE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.

FIRST DIVISION.

THE topic on which we enter is by no means superfluous at this time. Except where Puritan influences are still at work, we may safely affirm that the doctrine of the Spirit is almost entirely ignored. The representatives of modern theology, it is well known, have almost wholly abandoned it. Many of them deny the Spirit's personality in the most open and undisguised manner. Some affirm that a dogma on this topic is not essential either to religion or theology, and that we may altogether dispense with it. On the contrary, wherever Christianity has become a living power, the doctrine of the Holy Spirit has uniformly been regarded, equally with the atonement and justification by faith, as the article of a standing or falling Church. The distinctive feature of Christianity, as it addresses itself to man's experience, is the work of the Spirit, which not only elevates it far above all philosophical speculation, but also above every other form of religion.

In this day, moreover, it is impossible to divest the mind of the impression that, among those who take religion in earnest, a disposition exists, in no small measure, to pass over the supernatural agency of the Holy Spirit, and to speak and write upon religious truth as if the gracious intervention of the Son of God came more impressively home to men's business and bosom when disencumbered of any reference to

2

another Person as the great applier of redemption. In many cases that tendency may rather be called a sentiment than a formal dogma; with others it is a system. But in either case it betrays the most defective views of the relations of the Trinity. By maintaining silence on this doctrine, one of the grand provisions of the gospel for meeting the wants of mankind is omitted.

But, it may be asked, not without reason, can any man in the nineteenth century from the entrance of Christianity be in doubt as to the Personality, Deity, and work of the Holy Ghost? Does not the Church declare her belief in it as an elementary and fundamental truth in every administration of the ordinance of baptism? Is it not inserted in all the Church creeds? Have not theologians in former ages discussed and vindicated it down from Patristic times and Reformation times so copiously, that many pages might be filled with a mere enumeration of the writers' names, and with the titles of their works? The answer is: Notwithstanding all this, unsettled opinion and doubt prevail upon this point, to a surprising degree, abroad and at home, even among those who profess to accept as authoritative the words of prophets and apostles, and the sayings of our Lord. One explains them in one way, and another explains them in a different way, in order to exclude this doctrine.

No one, it is true, has attempted, in reference to the doctrine of the Spirit — as has often been attempted in reference to the atonement — to show that the Lord's own teaching differed, in essential points, from that of His apostles. The harmony is so unquestionable and so obvious, that it gives to all a sufficient ground of confidence. Moreover, less is said than formerly of accommodation; for reverent minds are ready to admit that deception, however subtle and refined, is still deception, and an element which is not to be endured in a divine revelation. Theological opinion has taken a forward step in this respect, though not much is really gained,

3

while the language of Scripture — which a natural method of interpretation would make conclusive as to the personality and work of the Spirit — is explained away as figurative language, or as mere personification, by many modern divines.

To set forth the doctrine of the Spirit EXEGETICALLY, according to the programme which I have sketched, is not an unnecessary task in the present state of theology; and, in carrying out this undertaking, my object is truth, and truth alone, without the bondage of any artificial system, past or present. So far as the outline or Scripture testimony is concerned, I shall largely content myself with the results of investigation, and often hold the statement of the process in abeyance. And where the word is silent, I shall accept its silence as well as its declarations without hesitation or reserve.

As to the Jewish Church, it was formed by a special education to receive Christianity when it should come. It was the issue of a long development, that they might comprehend the import of Christ's instruction.

As we come in contact, in the course of this discussion, with the doctrine of the Trinity at every point, it may be fitting to refer to that great theme at the outset, so far at least as concerns the relation which essentially belongs to the Holy Spirit. This will pave the way for the consideration of the other doctrines which we have to discuss. Though every attempt to comprehend or to unfold the mystery of the Trinity has failed, and must fail, from the ineffable nature of the subject, we may affirm that in the five following propositions the faith of the Church is satisfactorily exhibited, viz.: —

1. That there is one God or divine essence.
2. That the same numerical divine essence is common to three truly divine Persons, who are designated Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

4

3. That between these three divine Persons there obtains a natural order of subsistence and operation; that the first Person hath life in Himself (Joh 5.26); and that the second and third Persons subsist and act from the first.
4. That this order of the divine Persons belongs to the divine essence prior to, and irrespective of, the covenant of grace.
5. That this natural order of subsistence and action is the ground and reason of the several names, Father, Son, and Spirit, the Son being begotten of the Father, and the Spirit by spiration proceeding from both.

And as to the divine WORKS, the Father is the source FROM WHICH every operation emanates (ἐξ οὗ), the Son is the medium THROUGH WHICH (δὲ οὗ) it is performed, and the Holy Ghost is the EXECUTIVE BY WHICH (ἐν ᾧ) it is carried into effect.

The Christian Church, from the beginning, believed in the doctrine of the Trinity with unhesitating faith. It was not a conclusion formed gradually in the consciousness of the Christian community, partly by reflection, partly by Biblical inquiry. The Church found in the baptismal formula an emphatic allusion to Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, and simply accepted it as her doctrine of the Trinity. It was brought within the scope of every Christian mind, learned and unlearned, as the fundamental and primary truth, of which no Christian disciple could plead ignorance. The substance of the doctrine is, that God is one, and that the Persons are distinct; and after all the investigations that have confounded and fatigued the acutest understanding, we only return to the same simple formula of baptism, which is level to the capacity of the humblest.

The doctrine of the Trinity is not so much a point among many as the very essence and compendium of Christianity itself. It not only presents a lofty and sublime subject of contemplation to the intellect, but furnishes repose and peace to the heart and conscience. *To explain this mystery is not our province.*

5

All true theologians, who have trained and disciplined their minds in the right school, whether in expounding positive truth or in combating erroneous views, have uniformly accepted it as their highest function simply TO CONSERVE THE MYSTERY and to leave it where they found it, in its inscrutable sublimity, or, as the poet expresses it, “dark though excessive bright.” Leibnitz happily said, If we could bring it within the terms of any humanly constructed definition, it would be a mystery no longer. The zeal and erudition of the Fathers, accordingly, were mainly employed to retain and preserve the mystery.

And when we look at the doctrine from the practical point of view, a belief of this great truth is absolutely essential to the Christian man and to the Christian Church. Without it, Christianity would at once collapse. As this doctrine is believed on the one hand, or challenged on the other, Christian life is found to be affected at its roots and over all its extent. Every doctrine is run up to it; every privilege and duty hang on it. It cannot escape observation that scarcely a heresy ever appeared which did not, when carried out to its logical results, come into collision with the doctrine of the Trinity at some point. Through the whole history of opinion, the ever-recurring fact presented to us is that, however a man may begin his career of error, the general issue is that the doctrine of the Trinity, proving an unexpected check or insurmountable obstacle in the carrying put of his opinions, has to be modified or pushed aside; and he comes to be against the Trinity because he has found that it was against him.

The attacks on the Trinity, menacing though they might be at the time, have commonly been the occasion of real benefit to the Church. The Church might have been less on the alert than was found to be imperatively necessary when asked, for instance, by the Sabellian to allow within her pale a mere modal distinction in the Trinity, or asked by the Arian to give a certain amount of liberty to such as questioned or denied the supreme Deity of the second or third person of the Trinity.

6

By varied discipline and experience, she has been schooled to apprehend the doctrine of the tri-personal God, or of the threefold personality in unity, as the most fundamental, vital, and practical of doctrines; that it forms the ultimate ground of every truth; that it is absolutely intertwined with the essential provisions of the gospel; and that the plan of salvation cannot be left standing entire, if this great doctrine, the keystone of the arch, is either loosened or displaced.

The Church, accordingly, has always posted herself here as in the Thermopylae, where her last stand is to be made. She knew that, without this doctrine, the Creed would have no coherence, nor her members solid peace. The enlightened Christian neither expects nor wishes to find that which will not baffle his comprehension by its vastness, nor dazzle him by its splendour. Nay, the appeal to the ADORING WONDER of the finite mind becomes more powerful when its limited capacity fails to comprehend the theme in all its magnitude. The Christian Church, feeling that she has to believe what God has condescended to declare, and alive to the fact that there is no loyalty greater than the loyalty of the intellect, calls for the submission of the finite reason. Hence every one feels the force of these beautiful words of Gregory Nazianzen in reference to the Trinity. In his sermon on Baptism he says: οὐ Φθάνω τὸ ἐν νοῆσαι καὶ τοῖς τρισὶ Περιλάμπομαι οὐ Φθάνω τὰ τρία διεεῖν καὶ εἰς τὸ ἐν ἀναφέρομαι “I cannot think of the

ONE but I am immediately surrounded with the splendour of the THREE; nor can I clearly discover the three, but I am suddenly carried back to the One.”

The objection to the Trinity on the ground of the unfathomable mystery, has been repeated in every successive age. And it may not be out of place to say that if there had been no mystery, an opposite objection might not improbably have emanated from the very same parties.

7

Had there been no inscrutable doctrines beyond the sounding line of man’s reason, no profound mysteries in the revealed account of God’s Being, purposes, and works — if such a thing were conceivable in a revelation communicated from God to man — the objectors might have decried and depreciated it from a wholly different point of view as a stale, fiat, and unprofitable message, which had nothing in it worthy of the claims which it made on men’s minds, because it had nothing beyond the discovery of the human understanding. When we reach the manhood of our being, we may understand what we cannot now fathom. Addison and Swift both conjectured, not unwarrantably, in connection with these very mysteries, that new faculties might be given in the life to come to apprehend what is now incomprehensible and unknown.

I shall endeavour to bring out the testimony of Scripture to the doctrine of the Holy Spirit as contained in the Old and New Testaments. As my object in this division is to set forth the place which the doctrine of the Spirit occupies in contrast with the modern Sabellianism, I shall rather state the cumulative import than launch out into a full or exhaustive exegesis of all the passages; and in fulfilling this task it will be my aim, except where some elucidation is necessary, to mix with it as little of my own as possible, lest foreign elements should invalidate the evidence which is so conclusively furnished by the harmonious testimony of the Scripture itself from first to last. I shall try to evolve what the Scriptures say; and for that end transplant myself into the circumstances in which the writers of the different ages were placed. To penetrate, as far as possible, into the teaching of inspired prophets before the coming of Christ, and of inspired apostles subsequent to His resurrection, it will be necessary to bring out, in a condensed outline, their scope and harmony.

8

That the Scripture testimony about to be adduced in reference to the Holy Spirit may also be readily applied to the refutation of modern errors, it may not be out of place to mention the Sabellian postulate, and the deduction from it to which Schleiermacher has given expression in this century. According to the view stated by Schleiermacher in his ingenious way, all that is intimated by the names SON OF GOD and SPIRIT OF GOD did not exist before the work of redemption, and before the founding of the Christian Church respectively. It was held by him that God is Father as He creates, Son as He redeems, and Holy Spirit as He unites Himself to the Christian Church, but without the personality which the Church doctrine ascribes to each of them. Sabellianism was always at a loss to explain the Biblical truth that all things were created by God through the Son and the Holy Spirit; for the divine Persons must manifestly have existed before they could act. That was the argument which of old the Patristic writers adduced with invincible force against the Sabellian theory; and neither Sabellius in former days, nor the Schleiermacher school in recent times, have done anything to meet or answer it. The Jewish Church, though carefully trained, failed at the decisive moment, from this bias which had come to predominate in it. And many have, in all ages, been engulfed by opinions which impugned the Spirit’s personality on the one hand, or questioned His supreme Deity on the other. Of those who deviate from Church-doctrine in our day, the majority are led by a strong Sabellian bias, which, while it admits that predicates of Deity are undoubtedly ascribed to the Spirit, interprets these allusions as descriptive of a mere influence or energy, or as attributes and manifestations of Deity without the personal distinction in any form. This Sabellian view is at present a

theological current of greater force and wider diffusion than is commonly suspected by theological readers in this country.

9

We shall endeavour in a dissertation, introductory to the six dogmatic lectures afterwards given in proper form, to give an outline of the Biblical testimony to the doctrine of the Holy Spirit. This will supply an exegetical foundation.

INTRODUCTORY DISSERTATION.

We shall first keep the Old Testament doctrine of the Spirit full in view; and in tracing the stream of history, we shall consider (1) the testimony to the spirit of prophecy in the Books of Moses and Job; (2) in: the time from Moses to David; (3) in the period from David to the Exile; (4) from the Exile to the close of the Old Testament. But underneath this mere chronological division, we shall have occasion to notice the Spirit's operations in nature and in grace; in the supernatural gifts conferred upon gifted men, and in the prophecies relating to the Messiah prior to the Pentecostal economy.

I. THE BOOKS OF MOSES AND JOB.

"The Spirit of God moved on the face of the waters" (Gen 1.2). The term Spirit (*Ruach*) denotes a BREATH, a WIND, and also an intelligent thinking Being. The designation "the Spirit of God," like the analogous title "the Son of God," implies distinct personality, and indicates that He is from God, or of God. The action here ascribed to Him, in connection with the creation of all things, seems to be a metaphor taken from the incubation of a bird, and sets forth how the Spirit, dove-like, sat brooding o'er the dark abyss, and made it pregnant.¹

"By His Spirit He garnished the Heavens" (Job 26.13). He is called God's Spirit ("His Spirit") to show that He is of the same essence with God and from Him. When it is said that He who garnished the heavens is the Spirit of God, we are not warranted to interpret the words in any other way than as a declaration that the personal Spirit — elsewhere called the finger of God and the power of God — adorned the heavens, and framed them to display the divine glory.

10

"The Spirit of God made me," says Elihu, *"and the breath of the Almighty hath given me life"* (Job 33.4). The reference to a personal agent standing in a unique relation to God — that is, from God, but personally distinct — is too express to be evaded by any subterfuge.

"Thou sendest forth Thy Spirit, they are created; and Thou renewest the face of the earth" (Psa 104.30). There the Psalmist speaks of God's manifold works according to their order. He shows that God gives the animals their food; that He hides His face and they are troubled; that He takes away their breath and they die; that He sends forth His Spirit, and a fresh succession or race of animated beings is created. The title "Thy Spirit" distinguishes between the uncreated and the finite Spirit, the Spirit of God being the fountain of life; and creation, amid all its necessary changes, receives from Him its renovating and rejuvenating power. The blossom and decay of vegetation; the succession of races on the earth's surface; the bias impressed on various minds; the skill in arts; the manifold gifts which hold society together — are all His workmanship.

MAN MADE TO BE THE TEMPLE OF THE HOLY GHOST.

We come to the indwelling of the Spirit in primeval man, which may be called the deep ground-thought of all right anthropology, as appears from these words: *"The Lord God formed man of*

¹ Milton, i. 21 and vii. 233.

the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life" (Gen 2.7). When God breathed into man the breath of LIFE (or LIVES, for it is plural), we must understand life in the Holy Spirit as well as animal and intellectual life.

11

Calvin and the mass of commentators since his day have interpreted the words of the physical life, as if they intimated nothing more than the animation of the clay figure. The Patristic writers, Athanasius, Basil, Ambrose, and Cyril, refer the words to the occasion when God communicated the Spirit, the breath of the Almighty, the giver of the HIGHER as well as of the lower form of life. If further proof of the correctness of this interpretation were necessary, it is furnished by the contrast of DEATH threatened in the penalty, which certainly cannot be limited to natural death. Adam had the Spirit in the state of integrity, not only for himself, but for his seed; and he walked after the Spirit as long as he stood in his integrity. I must here refer a little more fully to the Spirit's work in connection with the first Adam.

From the narrative of creation, brief but suggestive, which is given in Genesis, the great thought is derived that, according to the constitution which God was pleased to give to the first man among the creatures of His hand, not only was a federal unity assigned to him as the head of the race, but a relation to the whole Trinity which comes to light, in his being made in the image of God. That he not only bore a likeness to God's perfections in his mental, moral, and religious constitution, but that he was placed in a peculiarly CLOSE RELATION TO ALL THE PERSONS OF THE TRINITY — nay, in a conscious personal relation to all the divine Persons — is clearly intimated in the words: "Let us make man in our image, after our likeness" (Gen 1.26). The use of the plural number in the pronoun "us" is not to be reduced, according to the evacuating principle of Rationalism, to a mere mannerism in style. Dr. Owen has well remarked that God, having manifested by other parts of creation His existence, nature, and perfections, designed in the creation of man to manifest Himself in a trinity of persons; a remark setting forth a momentous truth only too little pondered. For the right interpretation of many passages of Scripture in their coherence and meaning, it is necessary to take this thought along with us.

12

The question now raised in theological circles in reference to man is: Did he, as God's creature, realize in any measure His idea? And was he the object of divine complacency not only as the partaker of a pure nature, but as a Son who was then replenished, just as redeemed men are again replenished, with the Holy Spirit? Or, on the contrary, was he, according to the Rationalistic theory, formed in a low and rude condition, though capable of advancing in an ascending scale, and necessarily requiring even in his creation state some further intervention to make him correspond to His idea? On exegetical grounds as well as on the ground of analogy, we must hold that man as he was formed not only corresponded to His idea as a Son within the sphere of creaturehood, but was the temple of the Holy Ghost. This is a view so essential to all right conceptions of our primeval relationship, that without it no sound anthropology can be maintained. The deep ground-thought presupposed by Christianity is, that Adam had the divine image and life from the Spirit of Life. It follows, accordingly, that the elements were already deposited in him by which he was in a position to reach the full perfection of his being, as he was. He needed only to have further developed that which was already in him, and to abide the probation under which he was placed.

The advocates of the Rationalistic conception of man — however variously it may be modified, and however imposing some aspects of it may at first sight appear — describe man's original state as commencing with a low grade or type, and rising to a higher. But of all the forms in which this baseless theory has been presented, by far the most attractive is the novel theory

supported, in our day, by many able men, that an incarnation would have entered to complete the idea of man even though no sin had ever entered to disturb the harmony of the universe.

13

This favourite speculation¹ of modern German theologians has no Biblical ground, but has a tendency to introduce a wholly different conception of man's original state. It gives a false idea of his original integrity or perfection. According to this theory, they postulate the necessity of an incarnation to make man correspond to His idea; and what does that supposition involve? It necessarily implies imperfection in his very constitution, and in the adaptation of the means to the end designed. It reflects on the perfection of that nature in which our race was made. Assuming that man was formed by the Creator in an imperfect and rude state — that is, without the elements that would have unfolded themselves in the full efflorescence of his being — it takes for granted that the ideal of creation, without a new intervention from above, must have remained unrealized; that with all his natural powers exerted to the utmost, and with all the aids provided for him in his original sphere, he could not have completed his destiny without an intervention wholly new and supplementary. If there still remained a further extraordinary interposition to carry forward to completeness the act of creation which, by the supposition, was left imperfect or, at least, unfinished — in kind as well as in degree; if nature required no mere development within its assigned sphere into the perfection of its capacities, but was left defective in its structure or mental conformation from the first — then everything most confidently accepted by inspired and uninspired men from the beginning is seen in a cross light and through a distorting medium. If imperfection, at least in the sense of incompleteness, attached in such a degree to creation in its normal state — in other words, if it did not correspond to its idea — reason would be staggered. The moral problem of responsibility —

14

arduous enough as it is — would in that case be insoluble. We could not speak of all as “very good” in its primordial state, nor could we vindicate the ways of God to men. On the contrary, the representations of man from a Biblical point of view are to the effect that he had, from the first, realized and formed within him the divine idea to such an extent that he needed nothing more than the required probation in order to his being confirmed, and then exalted to an immensely higher degree, according to the promised reward.

We naturally ask whether *the first Adam had the Holy Spirit at his creation*. This must be affirmed whether we look at the exegetical grounds, which we hold to be conclusive (Gen 2.7), or at the analogy of the Second Adam. Though not denied in any quarter entitled to respect, Patristic, Romish, or Protestant, it has never been taken up in earnest by any divine of note, with the single exception of Howe, whose *Living Temple* proceeds upon it as a postulate. The explanation of that omission, from which not only anthropology but the doctrines of grace have suffered not a little, may be the following. In a treatise which long passed under the name of Augustin, there was a formal denial of the position that Adam in his state of integrity was in the possession of the Spirit. The great influence of Augustin's name, thus supposed to pronounce a different judgment, seems mainly to have had the effect of repressing due inquiry, and of blunting statements which would otherwise have been at once clearer, ampler, and less reserved in the direction to which I have referred. That treatise, ascribed to Augustin,² contains, however, so many gross mistakes and errors on many different points, and even on the doctrines of grace, on which the views of Augustin were the most pronounced, that any man might have detected the injury done to him by attributing such an unworthy composition to his pen. It is now with a general concurrence of opinion rejected as spurious,

¹ See Dorner's *Doctrine of the Person of Christ*; Liebner, Martensen, Ebrard.

² Vid. Quaest. ex utroque Testamento, Quaest. 123.

15

and replete with views which Augustin did not hold. The arguments from analogy which go to prove that Adam had the Spirit are conclusive.

The doctrine that man was originally, though mutably, replenished with the Spirit, may be termed the deep fundamental thought of the Scripture-doctrine of man. If the first and second Adam are so related that the first man was the analogue or figure of the second, as all admit on the authority of Scripture (τύπος τοῦ μέλλοντος, Rom 5.12-14), it is clear that, unless the first man possessed the Spirit, the last man, the Healer or Restorer of the forfeited inheritance, would not have been the medium of giving the Spirit, who was withdrawn on account of sin, and who could be restored only on account of the everlasting righteousness which Christ brought in (Rom 8.10). Sin separated between the soul and God; and, according to the tenor of God's just and holy moral government, the Spirit was of necessity withdrawn at the moment when Adam lent an ear to the tempter's glozing seduction. And the privation to which man's nature was subjected, as the term FLESH clearly shows (Gen 6.3), implies that he had forfeited that fulness of the Spirit which he once possessed, and which, but for sin, would have descended as an inheritance to his posterity.

The arguments against the view that Adam had the Spirit are wholly destitute of Biblical ground, and of no validity or weight. One ill-understood text has been adduced to prove that Adam was not replenished with the Spirit, viz.: "the first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening Spirit" (1Cor 15.45). That is the main argument in the spurious treatise ascribed to Augustin. But that passage, when closely examined, is no absolute antithesis; for the apostle aims to show that there is a natural body and a spiritual body, the one before the other; the one inherited from the first man, the other received from Him who is the quickening Spirit.

16

But the apostle says nothing against Adam being replenished with the Spirit — nothing in favour of the notion which it was adduced to prove. On the contrary, it is clear that man must have realized his idea, for God pronounced all very good; and he had only to undergo the necessary probation, which implied that his nature, from the first, was so perfect that it might certainly have come out unhurt. Why, in fact, was there any probation at all, if man at his creation was left without the Spirit to guide and animate him? And how could he be tried if he did not answer his idea, as supplied with all that was requisite for the trial, the successful issue of which would have placed him amid the glory and incorruption of the resurrection state?

There are two conclusions to which we must come: (1) Man as a creature, but with a certain standing as a son in the beloved Son, was the object of the divine complacency, though mutable; (2) His soul was inwardly irradiated with the supernatural presence of the Holy Spirit, which might have been retained. That man stood at first related to all the persons of the Trinity, and bore the image of God, though mutably, upon his soul; that the Spirit of Life filled him for a service of holy love, may be accepted as a postulate in all our investigations — a postulate which Christianity, as a restorative or remedial economy, will not permit us to ignore, although it has never received the place to which it is entitled in any system of anthropology Patristic or Protestant. But it may be affirmed, on the ground of the analogy between the two Adams, that Christ would not have been the medium of giving the Spirit, if the first man had not possessed the Spirit. The Spirit departed from the human family when Adam gave ear to the tempter's seducing words; and the restoration by the second man implies the possession of the Spirit by the first. No one, in fact, can read the action of Christ on the first evening after His resurrection, and consider the symbolic breathing on the disciples,

17

and the words which fell from Him in conveying a new gift of the Spirit, without an impression that these two actions were counter-parts — the one the original gift, the other the restoration of what was lost.

The fall involved three things, which must be regarded as presuppositions to the whole theme which we are now discussing: —

- (1.) A captivity to Satan by right of conquest (Luk 11.21).
- (2.) A withdrawal of the Holy Spirit (Jude 19).
- (3.) An entire corruption of man's nature, now called flesh, or the flesh (Gen 6.3; Joh 3.6).

No sooner had sin entered than we find the Mediator carrying out by His Spirit the provisions of the remedial plan by announcing the tenor of the gospel, and by putting enmity between the seed of the serpent and the seed of the woman. There THE WORD AND THE SPIRIT are already in conjunction — the one filling the mind with truth, the other filling it with spiritual life. From the first we have brought before us the ruin and the remedy; then the two opposite families; then a marked revival in the days of Enos; then as marked a declension. We hold it as antagonistic to all Biblical doctrine to represent the first man, as the Rationalistic theory uniformly represents him, as originally made on a lower platform, and as always mounting higher.

“My Spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh” (Gen 6.3) — With whatever shade of meaning the word rendered *strive* may be connected, the general import unquestionably is, that the forbearance long exercised was about to close, that the antediluvians had rejected the testimony of the Spirit, addressed to them by Spirit-filled men, and despised every call to repentance and faith. *He who thus speaks of His Spirit is undoubtedly Christ.* This we learn from Peter, the inspired commentator on the words in Genesis (1Pet 3.19). The Spirit of Christ speaking by Enoch and Noah was about to leave that corrupt generation to its doom.

18

The Messiah, having received the Spirit by anticipation for the purposes of His kingdom, on the ground of the coming atonement, had preached the gospel to them by the mouth of Noah, and the message was impiously rejected. The Spirit of Christ, who filled and animated all the prophets, had not only summoned them to repentance, but testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow (1Pet 1.11).

We come next to Abraham, who was called to leave his country and kindred, and received no fewer than eight theophanies. He was called a prophet, and therefore he had the Spirit (Gen 20.6). The three patriarchs, indeed, who are called the first-fruit and root of the covenant people (Rom 11.16), evinced in many ways, and especially at the close of life, the spirit of prophecy. In Joseph we see the same gift continued, and it was made the means of preserving the Old Testament Church; for the language of Pharaoh in reference to him was plainly borrowed from Joseph himself, when he said: “Can we find such a man as this — a man in whom the Spirit of God is?” (Gen 41.38).

In reference to Moses, we find explicit statements that he was raised up and qualified by the Spirit of God for his great commission. When the Lord, to relieve his heavy burden, associated seventy elders to bear rule along with him, He said:

“I will take *of the Spirit* that is upon thee, and put it upon them” (Num 11:1 7). We see from that memorable narrative that the Spirit rested upon them as the spirit of prophecy, a fact which accredited their commission. The incident connected with Eldad and Medad made that donation of the Spirit all the more remarkable. It is said of Joshua, he was a man *in whom was the Spirit*; for Moses had laid his hands on him (Num 27.18; Deu 34.9). Many passages in like manner

speak of the Spirit of God coming upon men in a supernatural way, that they might be equipped for official service. The Spirit's work in this period is seen in many spiritually-minded men,

19

as well as in the supernaturally gifted few. The miraculous gifts which at times were copiously given were but a sign, and might be withdrawn, while the Spirit of Life remained. The same spirit of faith and the same new nature were always found in a remnant forming the true Church of God, in reference to which God said by Jeremiah: "I remember thee, the kindness of thy youth, the love of thine espousals when thou wentest after me in the wilderness" (Jer 2.2). The presence of the Spirit appeared in the drops from heaven accompanying the Sinai covenant, which, with all its sternness and shadows, was a mode of administering the covenant of grace (Psa 68.8).

The Spirit is seen also in inspiring Moses to commit to writing the word of God, the great outward means for promoting the spiritual good of the children of men. We see the Spirit's work, moreover, in all the theophanies and audible voices, in all the prophecies and types outwardly given; but we see it also in that spiritual illumination of multitudes of true believers, which is far different from the inner consciousness of which our modern divines are fond of speaking. There are two noteworthy passages which refer to the comforting power of the Spirit during the wilderness sojourn, and which apply to the Church at large, and not to the supernaturally gifted few: (1) "Thou gavest also Thy *good Spirit* to instruct them, and withheldest not Thy manna" (Neh 9.20); (2) "Where is He that put His Holy Spirit within him?" (Isa 63.11); "As a beast goeth down to the valley, the *Spirit of the Lord* caused him to rest" (ver. 14).

II. FROM THE TIME OF MOSES TO DAVID.

The Spirit of God is not mentioned in the whole Book of Joshua. Joshua himself, indeed, was full of the spirit of wisdom (Deu 34.9). After the elders who outlived Joshua had passed away, we find the indications of a great change.

20

In the Book of Judges, which ushers us into a period of declension, repeated allusion is made to the fact that the Spirit of God came upon men supernaturally gifted, and raised up for the deliverance of Israel. The people from time to time did evil in the sight of the Lord; they were delivered into the hand of some of the neighbouring nations; they repented and cried to the Lord — an alternating state of things which we find pervading the entire book; and then a bold, leader was raised up by the Spirit of God to deliver them. Thus the Spirit of the Lord came upon Othniel, and he judged Israel (Judg. 3.10), upon Gideon (6.34), upon Jephtha (11.29), upon Samson, a very mixed character, with strong faith, but with equally great personal defects all too marked (14.19). Then war was waged successfully on the nations which had oppressed them. The Spirit of God, the author of all those gifts which they received, intellectual as well as spiritual, kindled in them intrepid valour; for God was King of the Theocracy, and it redounded to His glory to break the yoke of the oppressor, when the purposes of discipline were served. One hero after another, endowed with extraordinary courage, patriotism, and zeal, was raised up by the Spirit of God to deliver Israel.

After the unquiet times of the judges, a period of marked revival appears in the days of Samuel, the last of the judges. Next to Moses, Samuel, who walked with reformatory zeal and power in the steps of the former, may be regarded as the greatest benefactor of the nation, which, in the interval between the two, had forgotten the law, lost true conceptions of God, sensualized His worship, and become enfeebled by irreligion and vice. In a higher sense than could be affirmed of any other of the judges, Samuel was a deliverer of the nation; for he delivered it from irreligion, ignorance, and vice. This was a transition period to the flourishing times of the

Israelitish kingdom. When the Spirit came upon Samuel at a time when God imparted to him one theophany after another, a new state of things was introduced.

21

The spirit of prophecy filled Samuel in a peculiar way (1Sam 10.20), and from his time downwards an order or school of prophets arose. A whole line of prophets, not in succession like the priesthood, but in a succession of a higher order, appeared to guide the future history of Israel. We are thus supplied with a true idea of the nature of prophecy, on which we can cast only a passing glance, because a full description of this remarkable institution would demand a far more many-sided inquiry than either our aim or our limits will permit.

The prophet required for the duties of his function the inspiration and guidance of the Holy Ghost. He personally represented the cause of God, and viewed historical events of every class in relation to Jehovah and His law. Hence his message was largely the proclamation of warnings and menaces, or the burden of the Lord, which the ungodly often turned into ridicule. He was the organ of the Holy Spirit; and it was the impulse imparted by the Spirit of God that animated and enlightened him. The Lord Jesus by the Spirit, dispensed by anticipation for the purposes of His kingdom, on the ground of the future atonement, revealed Himself to their Spirit, moving them to speak and act, and also to write when an addition was to be made to the Old Testament canon. It was not according to their will that they either spoke or continued silent. Like a musical instrument which gives out its tones only as it is struck, they simply obeyed as the Spirit acted on each prophetic mind at His pleasure, using all those peculiar gifts or aptitudes with which He had endowed the different individuals for the end He had in view, and which were called into activity only so far as they were moved by the Holy Ghost (2Pet 1.21); and hence they acted as God's servants, or as His mouth, whenever they spoke the words of God (Exo 4.16; 2Kng 9.7). The prophet, accordingly, is described as a man of the Spirit, who felt himself apprehended by the Spirit (Hos 9.7);

22

and a discretionary commission was never entrusted to him. God never deposited the gracious supplies of His Spirit in Churches, ministry, or ordinances. Nor did it run counter to this undoubted truth when Elisha asked and obtained a double portion of Elijah's spirit. The request amounted to nothing more than this: that the same Spirit that dwelt in the departing prophet might by the dispensation of God's free gift dwell in a large measure also in him; much like the arrangement according to which the first-born got a double portion of the inheritance.

The influence wielded by these Spirit-filled men was great. They were watchmen and shepherds (Isa 21.11; Zec 11.3). As contrasted with what was merely political, they represented the spiritual elements of the kingdom of God; and as contrasted with the frequently secularized priests, with their outward forms and sacrifices, they laid emphasis on the fear of God (Isa 1.11-15; 1Sam 15.22). Again, as compared with the kings, who often leant on an arm of flesh, the prophets, men of the Spirit, uniformly counselled trust, not in confederacies, but in the God of Israel (Isa. 8.12).

Into the mode of giving prophecy it is needless to inquire, for it was simply miraculous, and therefore inscrutable. They who received this gift had an intimation of the divine will, and therefore received something that they had not before. They performed what was competent only to those who were inspired, and therefore announced something not directly communicated to the rest of the people. No prophet alleged that he obtained from God the gift or the aptitude of intimating the divine will, or of foretelling future events at his discretion. That power or capacity was never given to them. Thus Jeremiah expressly said that he knew not that they had devised devices against him (Jer 11.18). Daniel denied that he knew the dream or the interpretation by any wisdom of his own; and it was in answer to prayer that the secret, which no wise man or astrologer could ever have discovered,

23

was made known to him (Dan 2.19, 30). It is clear that the prophets never wished it to be understood that they gave forth their predictions as the result of their own wisdom. On the contrary, they declared that God alone knew future and contingent events; and that He claimed this knowledge as His absolute prerogative (Isa 42.9). The word of the Lord, moreover, came only at certain times. The prophets never supposed, nor did the Israelites believe, that the power of prophecy was possessed by any man as a constant or uninterrupted gift. This sufficiently shows that the writers of the Old Testament understood that the Spirit of God was a personal agent, that He was very God.

When we put all these facts together, it is clear that the Spirit of God is something distinct from the prophet's mind, and from any natural capacity with which he was endowed. We nowhere read that God first revealed something to the Holy Spirit as if He were not consubstantial with God Himself, and then charged Him to convey the communication to the prophet. On the contrary, while there is a certain order of subsistence and operation in the Godhead, the Spirit of God is always spoken of as possessing divine intelligence, omnipotence, and omnipresence; and all the prophecies are uniformly spoken of as the immediate act of God Himself. The personal Holy Spirit, or the Prophetic Spirit, is called "The Spirit of God" in the Books of Samuel.

The result of our investigation up to this point demonstrates that the Spirit of God is not a virtue or excellency of the human spirit which is to be sought and obtained from God. That theory of the modern theology¹ is utterly baseless. In the very oldest books of Scripture, and in all the stream of history downwards, THE SPIRIT OF GOD is always introduced as the Personal Creative Spirit of God.

24

III. FROM THE RISE OF DAVID TO THE EXILE.

The number of sacred books which appeared during this period is large. They include the Psalms in good measure, the writings of Solomon, Hosea, Joel, Micah, Isaiah, in all which we have express allusions to the Holy Spirit. And in tracing out the doctrine in these books we shall not permit ourselves to be swayed by that evacuating criticism which either breaks up the books into parts and fragments, or takes no account of the light reflected on the record as a whole by the supplementary and authoritative teaching of Christ and His apostles.

When David was anointed by Samuel to be king, we read: "*The Spirit of the Lord came upon David from that day forward*" (1Sam 16.13). His soul was so filled with the consciousness of his high destiny, and with the animating power and presence of the Spirit of God, that he became a different man. He was not only filled with the office-gifts necessary for rule, but was faithful to the principles which devolved on him as the subordinate under-king of a divine Theocracy. The same Spirit that ennobled and guided him abandoned Saul.

Nor must we forget the inspiration given to him. "*The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, and His word was in my tongue*" (2Sam 23.2). He received divine communications, intelligible enough to him as a prophet (Act 2.30), as to the birth and sufferings, the death, the resurrection, and glory of his greater seed, or offspring, all which are wrought into the Psalms. He refers in that closing utterance to the prophetic Spirit which had rested on him, and he virtually announces: "All my Psalms were composed by the inspiration and guidance of the Spirit of the Lord."

¹ By a perversion of all sound exegesis, DIEHL, in the *Jaarboeken voor Wetenschappelijke Theologie*, 1850, and KLEINERT, in the *Studien und Kritiken*, explain away all these texts. So also do VON COLLN, STEUDEL, etc., in treating of Old Testament theology.

But while these allusions to the Spirit are of a more public and official character, there are others in which we trace the Spirit's operations upon himself as a regenerate and sanctified man:

25

"Whither shall I go from Thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from Thy presence?" (Psa 139.7). In this psalm, which may have been prepared before he ascended the throne, the omnipresence and omniscience which are affirmed of God are also declared to be equally the attributes of the Spirit of God. The psalm sets forth a gracious and beneficent omnipresence. It is only learned trifling, all too plainly betraying an unchristian bias, when it is expounded as meaning: "Whither shall I go from Thy stormy wind." The allusion is to the personal Spirit — "Thy Spirit" — graciously omni-present in all the universe to the believing mind. This is not a flight of imagination.

In the 51st Psalm David prays: *"Take not Thy Holy Spirit from me"* (Psa 51.11). David had grievously sinned, and in that psalm, which contains the expression of his repentance, he penitently prays that the Holy Spirit may not be taken from him. Previous to his fall he must have tasted the joy of God's salvation, and possessed that free Spirit, when he pleads with such a vehement desire for its restoration. Here, for the first time, we have the epithet HOLY connected with the Spirit of God. He is not only the Spirit of wisdom and the Spirit of power, but the Holy Spirit. And in another psalm He is designated the GOOD Spirit.

"Thy Spirit is good: lead me," or *"let Thy good Spirit lead me into the land of uprightness"* (Psa 143.10). He prayed that the same good Spirit that had always led him might lead him still. We cannot depart from the usual meaning of the expression "THY SPIRIT," as alluding to the personal Holy Ghost.

The unction and fragrance of the Spirit with which the Psalms are replete lead me to notice, before leaving this portion of our survey, that it is an utter misconception to represent the Old Testament religion as more fed by mundane hopes, than by the influence of the Holy Spirit.

26

It is to pervert the plainest evidence to affirm, as Cocceius and his school affirmed, that there was neither sonship nor the spirit of adoption in the Old Testament Church. That was to ignore the Abrahamic Covenant, and Christ's divine presence with His Church, and merely to fix all attention upon the intermediate and transitory Sinai Covenant. But the Psalms to which we are adverting, when considered as the actual expression of praise for the Israelitish Church, as well as a legacy handed down to us in the Christian Church, sufficiently refute that view. No book of a similar kind was prepared for the New Testament Church. The Holy Spirit, replenishing the sweet singers of Israel with spiritual truth and holy love, anticipated in this way much of the necessity that should be felt in Christian times. I am not here discussing the debated point as to the use of psalms in public worship. My object is to show the spirituality of the Israelitish Church as evinced by its inspired and invaluable psalms. They describe the eternity and omnipresence, the majesty and condescension, the justice and mercy of God in a strain of the most fervid devotion. They sing of repentance and faith, of joy in God and delight in God's law, with an ardour beyond which it is impossible to go. They depict Christ's royal reign and His union with His Church; the anointing with the oil of gladness (Psa 45.7); the receiving of gifts for men (Psa 68.18); and the supreme dominion with which Christ was to be invested by the Father with a tenderness, unction, and joy, to which no other words are equal And those psalms which are called "new songs" anticipate the full millennial glory.

To reason back from effect to cause, the power and presence of the Spirit in ample fulness must have been graciously conferred to produce these psalms, and to use them fitly when prepared. We trace the power of God's Spirit in turning the captivity of Israel, and in filling them with penitence. Not only so: the apostle, when adducing the quotation from the Psalms,

27

“I believed, therefore have I spoken,” prefixes “*We having the same spirit of faith* — we also believe and therefore speak” (2Cor 4.13; Psa 116.10). The language of the apostle affirms the same faith and the possession of the same Spirit. From this fact, and from the whole series of quotations made from them, it is evident that the experience of the Church was the same in both economies, though complexional varieties attached to each. But these varieties, as Calvin¹ well remarks, describe the Church more in its corporate character than in the experience of the individual members. The true Church in the Old Testament, whatever might be the character of the nominal adherents, cannot be said to be unspiritual when we trace a faith and a knowledge of God, a fidelity and courage, an endurance and self-denial in all that great cloud of witnesses that fill us with astonishment, and leave us conscious that we are practically far behind.

When we peruse the sacred writings which came from the hand of Solomon, we find not only evidence of the Spirit’s illumination, but express reference to the Spirit in connection with the preacher’s words: *Turn you at my reproof: behold, I will pour out my Spirit unto you* (Pro 1.23). He means the graces of the indwelling Spirit, which were enjoyed then as well as now.

We come now to the writings of the PROPHETS expressly so called; and in these we find many allusions to the Spirit of God. If we classify them, we may say (1) that some of them refer to the time then present, and to the way in which the Spirit helped the prophets to fulfil their office;

(2) that some refer to the great effusion, when the Spirit should be poured upon the Church from on high; (3) that some refer to the unction awaiting the Messiah, which was the great central thought of the Jewish religion, as it is of all revealed religion.

28

HOSEA, the oldest writing prophet perhaps, and placed at the head of the minor prophets, speaks of “the man of the Spirit” (Hos 9.7). Whether, with many expositors, we refer the words to the boastful language of the false prophets, or refer them to the perplexity of the true prophets in a time of apostasy, such as Hosea encountered among the ten tribes, they bring out the general notion entertained in regard to the prophets, that they were men of the Spirit.

JOEL, sent about the same time to Judah, gives the prediction respecting the great outpouring of the Spirit which was reserved for the last days: “and it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh”

(Joel 2.28). The Spirit, called by the divine speaker “my Spirit,” is the Holy Spirit promised in connection with Messianic times. According to the New Testament quotation, there is a shade of meaning not to be lost in the words “of my Spirit” (ἀπό), distinguishing between the measure vouchsafed to men, and the inexhaustible fulness in the resources of the fountain. The expression: “*I will pour out,*” can refer only to the Lord, from whom the Spirit proceeds and by whom He is sent. The Lord God, who dwelt in the midst of His Church, promised that He would amply compensate it for the reproach of barrenness by imparting the copious supply of His Spirit. There is one party who sends and another who is poured out, personally distinct, but not different in essence. And this gracious promise as to the outpouring of the Spirit, when read in the full light of New Testament times, must be regarded as fulfilled at Pentecost, and the blessing as dispensed by the MESSIAH, the Son of God. This must be ascribed to the incarnate Son, in whom all fulness dwells, and the effusion itself consists in the communication of the Holy Spirit by His gracious presence and operation.

Plainly we are to understand the ordinary as well as the extraordinary gifts of the Spirit. The effects flowing from

¹ See Calvin’s admirable remarks on Gal iv. 1, etc.

29

that effusion of the Spirit were prophetic gifts to be conferred on the New Testament Church as well as on its several members; one and the, same Spirit distributing to everyone severally, according to His will Joel divides the gifts into three classes — prophecy, dreams, and visions. There are various interpretations of these three promised gifts; but the allusion is to different forms of revelation. As to PROPHECY, it is either taken more generally for an intimation of the divine will, or more strictly for the prediction of future events by the aid of the Holy Spirit. As to DREAMS, they were certain images presented to the mind in sleep, and understood by the Spirit's interpretation in such a way that no doubt was entertained either as to their import or their origin. As to VISIONS, they were appearances submitted to the eye or to the cognitive faculty, and must be understood as immediate revelations while the seer was asleep or awake.

But neither are we to exclude the ordinary and sanctifying gifts of the Spirit. This appears, beyond dispute, from the fact that, according to the intention of the supreme Dispenser of them, that shower of heavenly gifts, which filled the mind of those to whom they were promised, was meant to lead them to a true invocation derived from faith, or to “call on the name of the Lord” They were converting and sanctifying gifts, such as faith, hope, love, and invocation. They were also ministerial gifts for awakening and edifying the mind of others.

Consider what is intimated by the ALL FLESH, on whom this gracious effusion of the Spirit was to be conferred. When we ask what was meant by Joel's prophecy that the Spirit was to be poured upon ALL FLESH, the allusion cannot be, as Grotius held, to worthy Israelites. Nor can it be limited, as Origen limits it, to Churches gathered from the Gentiles. The term ALL is sometimes used in Scripture to denote classes; and hence we find Chrysostom, Luther,

30

Gerhard, referring it to classes of individuals, but restricting it to the display of supernatural gifts at the commencement day of the New Testament Church. In this sense it will mean men of every sort replenished at Pentecost with the extraordinary gifts of the Spirit — every age, sex, and condition. But the promise CANNOT BE LIMITED TO THAT DAY, nor to the miraculous gifts then communicated. This appears from the apostle's commentary when he said: “Repent and be baptized every one of you, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost” (Act 2.38) — where the reference is plainly to the sanctifying gifts of the Spirit and to His gracious inhabitation. And he added that the promise was to them, and to their children, and to all that were afar off. Others, as Glassius, make it men of every class in all nations. While the MIRACULOUS GIFTS, specially given to organize and found the Church, must be regarded as, in part, the accomplishment of Joel's prophecy, THE SAVING AND SANCTIFYING GIFTS must also be included down to the latest times. The phrase “upon all flesh” implies all nations, without distinction: for God was to pour out His Spirit on all nations, without distinction of Jew and Gentile, the partition-wall being taken down. No distinction was to be made, either in SOCIAL CONDITION or in NATIONALITY, as was intimated by the promise that the gifts should descend on old men and young, on sons and daughters, on servants and handmaids.

A question here arises: Are we to conclude that Joel's prophecy was fulfilled on the day of Pentecost, or was that outpouring of the Spirit but the symbol and dawn of another fulfilment yet to come? That it was fulfilled on Pentecost, ought not to be doubtful to anyone who reads Peter's sermon at the descent of the Spirit (Act 2.16). It was the opening of the river of the water of life which will flow on for ever. Where should we find a proof of Christ's Messiahship, or of the Christian Church — as contrasted with the Israelitish community still adhering to the covenant at Sinai —

31

if the fulfilment of Joel's prophecy did not take place, as Peter declared it did, on that Pentecost immediately following the Lord's ascension? That was not A MERE TYPE OF ANOTHER FULFILMENT. For neither Joel nor any other prophet speaks of any more definite fulfilment. Besides, Peter expressly pointed to this as the fulfilment. But the fulfilment is A GERMINANT FULFILMENT, which takes in all subsequent times. The effusion was not an abruptly terminated fact. It was not a type: for shadows and types have ceased. It is the issuing forth of the river of the water of life (Eze 47.1).

ISAIAH and MICAH, contemporary prophets in the days of Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah, refer, in various passages, very emphatically to the Spirit of God. I adduce Micah first in order. He had to combat the false prophets who made the people err, and who cried peace (3.5); for false prophets appeared among the people, and were permitted, for holy ends, to try the faithfulness of Israel in the course of God's moral government (2Pet 2.1). And the princes, as well as the people, were swayed by their flattering words. Hence the princes sometimes enjoined silence on the true prophet, saying, Prophecy not (Mic 2.6). When it is said: "*Is the Spirit of the Lord straitened?*" (Mic 2.7), that was the prophet's stern answer to those who would silence him. He intimates: Is the Spirit of the Lord so weakened and straitened that He dare not reprove you, or does He fail of resources to make His voice and authority felt? Will the divine Spirit yield to your presumptuous will? And when he says: "*I am full of power by the Spirit of the Lord, and of judgment, and of light, to declare to Jacob his transgressions*" (Mic 3.8), that is an announcement in the same tone. The prophet, with power and courage derived from the Spirit of the Lord, declares to the nation its sin; and though the nation resents the reproof, and would avoid, if possible, the summons to hear its stern tenor, it must be compelled to hear it. The prophet, nerved by the Spirit of the Lord, compels attention to his words.

32

The Spirit and power are conjoined as cause and effect, but distinguished. The prophet was also full of judgment by the same Spirit, that is, with the capacity of discerning the evil and the good in human actions, full of might or resolute perseverance also by the same Spirit.

ISAIAH has scattered throughout his prophecies allusions to the Spirit so manifold and various, in express descriptions and in brief turns of phrase, that it might not be difficult to put together, from his words, the complete doctrine of the Spirit. I shall briefly glance at the outline which he gives.

(a) He speaks of the Holy Spirit more generally. In the past history of Israel which he gives, the prophet shows that the nation in their wilderness-life was graciously supplied with the Spirit, and that He dwelt among them and gave them rest (Isa 63.11 and 14); but they rebelled against Him, and vexed His Holy Spirit (ver. 10). Events occurring in the moral government of God — such as the gathering of the vultures to their prey — are also ascribed to the Spirit *as the executive of all the divine purposes*: "My mouth it hath commanded, and HIS SPIRIT it hath gathered them" (Isa 34.16). The purging of Jerusalem from defilement and blood is also ascribed to the spirit of judgment and burning; that is, to the Spirit of God acting as the author and cause of all these effects, which are not penal, but gracious (Isa 4.4). Sinners taking counsel, but not of God, that they may take their own way, are said to cover with a covering — or to shelter themselves under a shelter and protection — which is not OF GOD'S SPIRIT; that is, they ran counter to the dissuasives and warnings which the prophet addressed to them (Isa 30.1).

(b) Isaiah's allusions to the Spirit's work as the anointer of the Messiah with the necessary unction for His office, are particularly noteworthy. He introduces the Servant of the Lord saying: "*And now the Lord God has sent me and His Spirit*" (Isa 48.16).

33

This is a much preferable translation to that of the Authorized Version, which is faulty here. The rendering we have accepted is preferable, and has been followed by some of the best exegetes, such as Cocceius, Vitringa, and Lampe. One conclusive argument which may be adduced against the Authorized Version is, that the mission of Christ is never ascribed to the Spirit; and that the Persons of the Trinity, who are all referred to in the passage, invariably act according to their order of subsistence in the Godhead. The Spirit is here said to be sent along with the Son, and indissolubly conjoined with the Son from the moment of the incarnation. In pre-Christian times the same order prevails by anticipation.

There are several passages in Isaiah which vividly set forth the large measure of the Spirit, which was to be shed upon the Christ from the time of His coming in the flesh. This was prefigured by various anointings introduced into the typical economy. And it appears especially in the name MESSIAH, THE ANOINTED, given to the promised One who should come into the world.

“The Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and fear of the Lord” (Isa 11.2).

“Behold my Servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my Spirit upon Him” (Isa 42.1).

“The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings to the meek,” etc. (Isa 56.1).

I have put these three passages together because they refer to the unction with which the Lord Jesus was to be anointed for His threefold office as Mediator between God and man; and though couched in the words of prophecy, no clearer language could possibly have been used to delineate the accomplished fact. The gift of the Spirit to replenish Christ’s humanity was not to supersede the necessity of His higher or divine nature,

34

for these supplies of the Spirit flowed from the hypostatic union. The Spirit Himself was to REST upon Him, which implies something far greater than a temporary visit, or a mere creature’s privilege. Then follows a vivid description of the effects of that unction in six definite predicates, or three pairs — the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of understanding and fear of the Lord; graces of which the Spirit of God is the sole author, and which are found only in their perfection and ample fulness in the Messiah. The graces of the Spirit there enumerated are six: but the general designation, “the Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him,” with which the promise commences, is the common name for the SPIRIT OF PROPHECY, as appears from the seventy elders, who received the spirit that was on Moses, and other instances. We may be warranted to number, then, the spirit of prophecy first, and say that the number BEVEN is preserved. Lampe, in commenting on this passage, gives perhaps undue rein to his fancy when he supposes that the first pair was given at the nativity, the second at His baptism, the third at His exaltation; and he thinks that the spirit of knowledge and fear of the Lord must be regarded as poured out upon His Church. He appears to have adopted this ingenious but unnatural view of the last pair, from the groundless idea that the fear of the Lord could not fitly be ascribed to the Lord Christ.

These three passages which we have put together delineate and foretell that unction of the Holy Spirit with which the Messiah was to be equipped for all His offices. The second passage is applied to Christ by Matthew (chap. 12.18). The third is quoted and applied by Christ Himself (Luk 4.17). The three passages, by a memorable variety of expression, set forth that the Spirit *should rest upon Him*, should *be put upon Him*, should *be upon him* as the anointing oil. The human nature of Christ was thus to be anointed with the plenary supply of

the Holy Spirit for the discharge of the mediatorial function: for it was predicted as the necessary unction of the Servant of the Lord.

35

(c) Another class of passages in Isaiah refers to the gift of the Spirit to the Church. How far the prophet was able to trace the connection between the gift of the Spirit to the personal Messiah and the gift of the Spirit to the Church, or to follow the order of events by which the one paved the way for the other, we do not presume to inquire. But that the Spirit was to be plenteously conferred on the Church in Messianic days, is repeatedly and explicitly affirmed by the prophet. Thus the pouring out of water and the pouring out of the Spirit are synonymous: "I will pour water on him that is thirsty, and floods upon the dry ground: *I will pour my Spirit upon thy seed, and my blessing upon thine offspring*" (Isa 44.3).

Two other passages may here be quoted — one showing how the Spirit resists the enemy, the other how He abides with the redeemed Church. (1) "When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him" (Isa 59.19). (2) "My Spirit that is upon thee, and my words that I have put in thy mouth, shall not depart," etc. (59.21).

IV. FROM THE BEGINNING OF THE EXILE TO THE END OF THE OLD TESTAMENT CANON.

To this period belong not a few books which are of a historical and prophetic character — viz. Ezekiel, Daniel, Haggai, and Zechariah, the Books of Chronicles, and Nehemiah. In these we find many allusions to the Holy Spirit.

There are two prophets, indeed, in this period, where the expression "Spirit of God" does not occur — viz. Jeremiah and Daniel. JEREMIAH, as a man, is described as sanctified from the womb; and, as a prophet, he received some of the most definite revelations ever communicated,

36

particularly the revelation of the New Covenant, with all its spiritual provisions and blessings (Jer 31.31). Yet we do not find in him the precise phrase which we have here been making it our object to trace out. The same thing holds true of DANIEL.

Though we cannot fail to perceive the Spirit's agency in all his interpretations of dreams, in all his visions of the future, and in all the allusions found in him to the anointing of Christ the Most Holy (Dan 9.24), yet the phrase "Spirit of God" is not found in him.

In the writings of EZEKIEL, the expression, "the Spirit," "the Spirit of God," or "my Spirit," very frequently occurs. Thus the prophet says: "The Spirit entered into me" (2.2); "The Spirit entered into me, and set me upon my feet, and spake with me" (2.24); "The Spirit lifted me up, and took me away" (2.14); "The Spirit brought me in the visions of God to Jerusalem" (8.3); "Afterwards the Spirit took me up, and brought me in a vision by the Spirit of God into Chaldea, to them of the captivity" (11.24). And all the great promises announced by Ezekiel have very express reference to the converting and sanctifying grace of the Spirit promised to Israel in connection with their restoration to the divine favour. Whether all is still future, or whether the promise to put the Spirit within them was fulfilled on their return from Babylon, has long been a point on which conflicting views prevail: "*I will sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. And I will put my Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them*" (Eze 36.25-27). Grotius, Greenhill, and others incline to the opinion which connects the fulfilment of the prophecy with the simple restoration of the remnant who came back from their seventy years' exile in Babylon; others absolutely connect the prophecy with the future.

37

Perhaps it may best be regarded as a germinant prediction, having a partial or incipient accomplishment, and a full and complete accomplishment. It certainly sets forth, as a consequence of the new heart which should be given, and of the Spirit which should be put within the Israelitish Church and nation, a remarkable change of disposition, character, and manners which should be produced. The promised sprinkling with clean water is the reality of what was typified by the water mingled with the ashes of the heifer, which was to be sprinkled upon persons and things to purify those who were defiled, and to render them clean and holy in the eye of the law (Num 19.2). The inward renewing of the people from moral and spiritual defects, indissolubly connected with the former, though distinguished from it, is emphatically ascribed to the irresistible grace of the Spirit of God. The agency used in taking away the insensibility of the stony heart, and making it a heart of flesh” susceptible and tender, is expressly ascribed to the Spirit within them.

Two other memorable prophecies denote the same thing, though couched in highly figurative language, and given in the form of vision — the reanimation of the dry bones in the valley of vision, when the prophet was commanded to prophesy to the Spirit (Eze 37.1); and the rapid outflow of waters, swelling into a river, from under the threshold of the house of God (chap. 47.1), which seems elsewhere to be called the river of the water of life (Rev 22.1).

The prophecy of HAGGAI announced for the comfort of the Israelitish Church, that though the external glory of the second temple should be inconsiderable as compared with the first temple, they were to entertain no fear, because THE SPIRIT should remain among them, a help in their infirmities, as well as the source of grace, of light, of comfort, and of holiness (Hag 2.5).

38

In the prophet ZECHARIAH we find two explicit allusions to the Spirit’s agency — one for the time of the prophet, another for the remote future of the chosen people. Amid discouragements which might otherwise have depressed Zerubbabel the ruler, the prophet was commissioned to show —

(1) That the maintenance of the Church was not dependent on the resources of worldly kingdoms, but on God’s Spirit: “*Not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, saith the Lord of Hosts*” (Zec 4.6). And this assurance was fortified by the significant and suggestive vision of the candlestick and of the two olive trees.

(2) Another promise of the Spirit was to the effect that He should be the Spirit of grace and supplication to the house of David in the latter days, and effect the national conversion of the people amid the deepest expressions of sorrow and mourning (Zec 12.10).

We have only further to notice the allusions to the Holy Spirit in NEHEMIAH and in the Book of CHRONICLES. In Nehemiah it is said, with special reference to the way in which the Jewish nation vexed the Spirit during their day of merciful visitation: “*Many years didst Thou forbear them, and testifiedst against them BY THY SPIRIT in the prophets*” (Neh 9.30). The passage means that the Holy Spirit moved the prophets, and spoke by them as organs whom He condescended to employ in the revelation of His mind and will. The allusions to the Holy Spirit in the Book of Chronicles record two historical occasions when the Spirit, coming on the prophets Jahaziel and Zechariah, prompted them to declare the mind of God. The one was a great crisis, when Jahaziel awakened the people’s courage and confidence in God in the immediate prospect of a great battle (2Chr 20.14). The other was an equally great crisis, when the prophet Zechariah, filled with the Spirit, was commissioned to reprove the people for their sins, but fell a victim to their fierce and fiery resentment (2Chr 24.20).

39

All these memorable instances in the history of Israel which we have surveyed, disclose to us the Holy Spirit in the work of imparting the superhuman gift of prophecy to a few, and the comforting power of the Spirit to the many. The Old Testament Church was in many respects different from the New Testament Church, the former being more occupied with externals, the latter being privileged to have a worship which may be described as more in spirit and in truth. But the divine personality of the Spirit, as we have clearly seen, was not less known and not less recognised in the one economy than in the other. He who spoke by holy men from the beginning was in every age recognised as a DIVINE PERSON.

THE TESTIMONY TO THE SPIRIT IN THE GOSPELS AND BOOK OF ACTS.

A long pause ensued from the last of the prophets to the time when the Spirit of God again spoke by revelation. "After an interval of nearly four hundred years the long-expected time of fulfilment arrived, and we no sooner take up the evangelist's narrative of the incarnation than we find, as was to be expected, the same important place occupied by the Holy Spirit. We shall endeavour here again to give an outline of the Scripture testimony in the same historical way.

It will be found on examination, that the Holy Spirit is referred to more or less copiously by every New Testament writer. Not only so; there is not a single New Testament book drawn up as a public document for the Church which does not contain a marked, though often brief, allusion to the Holy Spirit, and very frequently, if not always, in connection with the main design or scope which the writer had in view. The only exceptions are found in the three small Epistles of a more private nature — the Epistle to Philemon, and the Second and Third Epistles of John. In every book more specially prepared for public and ecclesiastical use, the allusion to the Spirit is most explicit. It will be my object, without attempting a commentary on all these passages,

40

which would carry us over too vast a field, to put together the cumulative evidence which they supply. Except in some passages which cannot be passed over without fuller elucidation, a few words of comment will for the most part suffice.

All the evangelists refer to the Holy Spirit in connection with the birth, baptism, and temptation of our Lord. Of all the New Testament writers, next to Paul, Luke most frequently reverts to it. We should be disappointed, however, if we sought in him a full explanation of the nature and properties of the Spirit, when his principal object was to sketch the supernatural and miraculous works of the Spirit in the first founding of Christianity. There was no denial and no dispute at that time as to the divine personality of the Holy Spirit.

We find that the doctrine of the Spirit taught by the Baptist, by Christ, and by the apostles, was in every respect the same as that with which the Old Testament Church was familiar. We nowhere find that their Jewish hearers on any occasion took exception to it. The teaching of our Lord and His apostles on this topic never called forth a question or an opposition from any quarter — a plain proof that on this subject nothing was taught by them which came into collision with the sentiments and opinions which up to that time had been accepted and still continued to be current among the Jews. The fundamental idea connected with the Messiah, that He **SHOULD BE ANOINTED WITH THE SPIRIT**, was still an undoubted doctrine; nor were the apostles ever compelled to meet doubts or to disarm opposition in the Jewish mind on this point.

The title **CHRIST** or **MESSIAH** was given to the Redeemer from the peculiar unction of the Spirit conferred on Him, which was unique in nature and in degree. The different servants of God who were filled with the Spirit, but in a far other way, illustrate this remark by contrast. To begin with, the promise which the angel Gabriel gave respecting the

41

Baptist. He was to be filled with the Holy Ghost even from his mother's womb, and go before the Lord Jesus in the Spirit and power of Elias (Luk 1.15-17). The words mean that he should be FILLED and immediately directed by the Spirit in the discharge of his prophetic function, and that though he did not work miracles like Elijah, for obvious reasons, he was supplied with gifts of wisdom and courage, holiness, zeal, and power, for the purpose of proclaiming the law and gospel to a corrupt and self-righteous generation. Of Elizabeth, Zacharias, and Simeon we read that they were FILLED with the Holy Ghost, and gave forth inspired announcements of the divine will (Luk 1. 42, 67, 2.25). But with Christ it was wholly different. The infinite fulness of the Spirit which was given to Him was constant and uninterrupted, and the result of the hypostatic union — that is, was the effect of humanity being assumed into personal union by the only-begotten Son. The Baptist, going before Him in the Spirit and power of Elijah, combined the two thoughts when he announced a Person pre-existent and divine, who was before him (Joh 1.15), and one not merely receiving the absolute fulness of the Spirit, but DISPENSING THE SPIRIT. The Messiah, according to the Baptist, was to baptize with the Spirit and with fire (Mat 3.11), which places Him in a different category from the Old Testament judges and prophets. That authority to give the Spirit was the culminating point of Christ's exaltation. It has been alleged by Schmid that this prediction of the Baptist was a thought unknown to the Old Testament prophets, and that it wholly transcended their range of view. It might have been difficult for anyone to find this truth in the language of the prophets, apart from the light reflected upon them by the New Testament statements. But we may probably affirm that it was there, to the satisfaction of those who could see it or should use aright the key when it should afterwards be given to them, for the Messiah was to receive gifts for men (Psa 68.10), and to be anointed with the oil of gladness above His fellows (Psa 45.7).

42

The baptism with the Spirit and with fire, which John contrasts with his own baptism, implies that the Spirit should be dispensed by the hand of the Messiah, and that He who had this power must be an accepted Mediator as well as a divine Person. But it also intimates an abundant communication of the Spirit's extraordinary and sanctifying gifts.

We come next to THE SAYINGS OF JESUS on the doctrine of the Spirit, and it is worthy of notice that on several points, and especially on the inscrutable relations of the Trinity, we find, as was to be expected, disclosures from His lips more definite and ample than are expressed by any of His servants, whether prophets or apostles. In His last discourses spoken in the midst of His disciples (Joh 14-16), He set forth for their comfort and for the Church's instruction the essential as well as economical relations in which the Holy Spirit stood to Him, and the mission of the Spirit for the guidance of apostles and the application of redemption, in a manner more full and ample than we find in any other part of Scripture. He shows (1) that the Father should send the Holy Spirit IN HIS NAME (14.26), a statement which implies that the Spirit, previously forfeited and withdrawn from mankind in consequence of sin, should, on the ground of His merits and intercession as the Mediator, be sent by the Father for all the purposes of His redemption. He shows (2) that the Spirit should be dispensed or given by His hand. This He repeatedly announced, and much more explicitly than was ever done by the Baptist.

We find that there are two principal divisions of our Lord's sayings on the subject of the Spirit — those which describe the Spirit's work in conversion, and those which describe the Spirit's work on the mind of apostles and of the Church in general.

Those sayings which describe the Spirit's work in conversion, will be most fitly adduced afterwards (Lect. IV.).

43

Christ also promised the Holy Spirit to His believing disciples as rivers of living water: “*If any man thirst, let him come to me, and drink. He that believeth on me, as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. But this spake He of the Spirit, which they that believe on Him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified*” (Joh 7.37-39). We have to notice first Christ’s saying, and then the apostolic commentary appended to it. While water is in certain passages the element of cleansing, it is introduced here and elsewhere (Isa 55.1) as the element of quenching thirst. They who are said in a religious sense to thirst have a painful feeling of want, and desire relief in the only way in which they can attain it. Two things are included in the invitation. They are desired TO COME, which simply means to believe, as is evident from the alternated expression employed in another passage (Joh 6.35), implying a misery from which they escape, and a fountain, that is, the Saviour, to which they are invited to repair; and they are desired to DRINK, for in no case can the sense of thirst be removed by merely looking at the fountain. The terms thus conjoined, COME and DRINK, mean faith, but are no mere tautology. They are the incipient, and the enlarged or continued exercise of the same grace of faith.

And it is promised that from the heart of this believing disciple there should well up or flow out rivers of living water, which intimate precisely the same thing as Christ said to the woman of Samaria (Joh 4.14). The meaning is not that the Spirit flows from one disciple to another — for none can so give the Spirit — but that the Spirit as a flowing river quenches the thirst and satisfies the desires, so that the soul no longer thirsts for any other object. The promise is not to apostles alone, for that ulterior promise following faith in Christ is made definite: *He that believeth on me*. But this by no means presupposes that the believing disciple has, by his own self-determining power, produced this faith without the teaching of the Father (Joh 6.45), the drawing of the Son (12.82), of the life-giving power of the Spirit (6.63).

44

The terms of the apostolic commentary subjoined are very significant. They show that Christ meant the Spirit, and that all the inward satisfaction, rest, peace, joy, and assurance flowing into the soul and quenching its thirst, are the result of the Spirit’s operation. When John says that Christ spoke of the Spirit which believers should receive, he explains why Jesus used the future tense and not the past: *rivers of living water shall flow*. But the apostle adds that “the Spirit was not yet,” because Christ’s glorification had not yet arrived. He does not mean that the Spirit did not yet exist — for all Scripture attests His eternal pre-existence — nor that His regenerating efficacy was still unknown — for countless millions had been regenerated by His power since the first promise in Eden — but that these operations of the Spirit had been but an anticipation of the atoning death of Christ rather than a GIVING. The apostle speaks comparatively, not absolutely, as is always done when the old and new economy are contrasted.

Christ’s testimony to the Spirit contained special reference to the Comforter (Joh 14.16-16.7). As further allusion will be made to these promises, it may here suffice to enumerate the passages and give their scope. For wise reasons, the Lord reserved His special teaching on the Holy Spirit to His last evening on the earth, that the donation of the Spirit might be connected in the mind of the disciples with His vicarious sacrifice, and that He might be expected as Christ’s Deputy. We are reminded of this antecedent and consequent when He speaks of sending the Spirit (Joh 15.26), of giving the Spirit (7.39), of *pouring out* the Spirit (Joel 2.28), of *kindling* a fire on the earth (Luk 12.49). The culminating point of Christ’s exaltation was to have the authority or power of baptizing with the Holy Ghost, as foretold by John the Baptist and announced by the Lord Himself (Act 1.5).

45

The authority to give the Spirit was assigned to the Son as the reward of His finished work. That no one might suppose that the Spirit's dependence on the Father is removed, Christ says: "Whom I will send to you from the Father" (Joh 15.26). And to show that this was done at Christ's intercession and request, He says: "I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter" (Joh 14.16); that is, to compensate them for their great loss in losing the visible presence of their Lord.

To be convinced of the importance which Christ attached to the mission of the Spirit, we have only to recall the terms in which He four times refers to the Paraclete or Comforter. Whether we render the word TEACHER with some, or HELPER with others, or ADVOCATE and PATRON with others, or abide by the translation COMFORTER, with which we are most familiar, the tenor of the promise implies that He was to be sent at Christ's intercession, and to act as His Deputy.

A brief summary of the different operations of the Comforter may be set forth as follows. He was, after Christ's departure from the world, to take the Saviour's place, and in all cases of official duty or emergency to impart the necessary aid. He was to remind the apostles what Christ had taught them; He was to give them clearer and more extensive communications in reference to the doctrine of Jesus; He was to unfold to them what they did not comprehend when the Lord was with them. They 'Were to be under the perpetual direction and superintendence of the Spirit, and supported by Him in the proclamation of the gospel wherever they should be sent — promises which imparted to them the greatest calmness, and gave rise to the most joyful state of mind. Such a close union is represented as existing between the Son and the Spirit, that it almost seems from the passages which describe the indwelling of the Spirit as if they were identical. But that is only in appearance. For Scripture represents Christ as sending the

46

Spirit to glorify Him — to supply His place — to lead the disciples into all truth, and to imbue the minds of the apostles with an immediate revelation of the divine will.

The Lord Jesus, in the evening of the first resurrection day, first began to GIVE THE HOLY SPIRIT to the apostles assembled in one place. And to make the occasion significant, He breathed on them, and said: "Receive ye the Holy Ghost." It has often been affirmed by expositors that this was but a pledge or promise accompanied with a symbolic action, and awaiting its accomplishment on the day of Pentecost. The words, however, must be accepted as they stand, and in their full significance. They intimate an actual donation of the Holy Ghost, not an allusion to the gift conferred fifty days afterwards. The atonement was already a completed fact, and accepted by the Father; the ever-lasting righteousness was actually brought in; every barrier to the communication of the Spirit was now removed; and the Lord did not deal in empty symbols or mere terms. He bestowed what the words imply when He said: "Receive ye the Holy Ghost" (Joh 20.22).

This interpretation enables us to dispose of two misleading opinions which have obtained greater currency than could have been supposed. (1) It is held by not a few, such as Stier, Wardlaw, and others, that the apostles acted with undue precipitance in filling up the vacant apostleship, because the promised effusion of the Spirit was not received. The doubts raised by Stier against the steps taken to supply the place from which Judas by transgression fell carry more serious consequences than the propounders of that interpretation imagine. It is of no avail to say, If the Spirit came in the room of Christ, it would have been more natural for Him to nominate the new apostle. The answer is, The Spirit was actually doing so through the Church. When it is said, Is it not possible that the apostles, with all their intellectual knowledge and childlike confidence, might err?

47

The answer is, that the Lord, in breathing upon them and imparting the Spirit, intimated that what they remitted or retained would be ratified in heaven; and as for the comparison between Matthias and Paul, whom Stier refers to as alone filling the vacant place, it is sufficient to say that Paul calls himself "one born out of due time." The whole college of apostles, to whom the Lord said: "Receive ye the Holy Ghost," cannot be supposed to have erred in their interpretation of the psalm (Psa 109.8), or in the further step of publicly filling up the vacant office.

(2) Another error is the modern notion propounded by the Plymouth Brethren, that believers are not to pray for the Holy Spirit, because He was once for all given on the day of Pentecost, and that the Christian body may not pray for what is already possessed. That rash and presumptuous position, by whomsoever it is held, is discredited by the fact that the apostles who had received the Holy Ghost on the first resurrection day continued with one accord in prayer and supplication for the promise of the Father (Act 1.14). They prayed for the Spirit though they had received the Spirit. They waited for more of the Spirit that they had in compliance with their Lord's command. This is the true attitude of the Christian Church in every age. And the history of the apostles shows that not once, but on many occasions, they were made partakers of the, baptism of the Spirit and fire.

THE EFFUSION OF THE SPIRIT ON PENTECOST.

The importance of the Book of Acts as the historic narrative of the public effusion of the Spirit cannot be over-estimated. It shows how the first disciples received the ascension gifts, and went forth equipped with them to found the Christian Church. We learn that the little company, obedient to the Lord's command, tarried in Jerusalem, not forming plans how they should appear in public,

48

but wrestling in prayer till they were endued with power from on high. At length all that was comprehended in Christ's farewell discourses found its wonderful accomplishment when the day of Pentecost was fully come.

The significance of the Pentecost may be noticed in connection with the Passover, the one referring to the Redemption, the other to the New Covenant, as in the history of Israel Pentecost, the fiftieth day from the Passover, and from the exodus out of Egypt, was the feast of First-fruits, and also, according to Jewish belief, the day when the Law was proclaimed from Sinai. Both facts have their proper import. Regarded as the feast of First-fruits, the Pentecost furnished the first -fruits of the world's conversion at the outpouring of the Spirit. Regarded as the commemoration day of the Sinai Covenant, which made the Jews a kingdom of priests, it was a fitting occasion for the removal of the old economy and the erection of the new, and to be the espousals day of the Christian Church.

A new revelation from God to man must needs be inaugurated with supernatural signs and miracles. As the Sinaitic Covenant was set up in a miraculous way, it is obvious that when the time arrived for its abrogation the new economy that superseded it must be ushered in by similar miracles. As God came down on the mount in a supernatural way, so did He bear witness to the apostles by signs and wonders and divers miracles and gifts of the Holy Ghost (Heb 2.4); or, as some will have it, the glory of the Lord, the Shechina or fiery pillar, again appeared.

The greatest event in all history, next to the incarnation and atonement, was the mission of the Comforter; for it will continue, while the world lasts, to diffuse among men the stream of the divine life. The Pentecost was the great day of the Holy Ghost, the opening of the river of the water of life.

49

As Goodwin¹ says: "He must have a coming in state, in a solemn and visible manner, accompanied with visible effects as well as Christ had, and whereof all the Jews should be, and were witnesses." Not only so; there must be a Church which at its commencement should give the clearest indications of its heavenly origin. That was the great birthday of the Christian Church.

The Christian economy was inaugurated amid supernatural manifestations which could not be questioned. When the reality came, the shadow passed away. The Jewish economy gave place before that which was to comprehend all nations. Now the New Covenant founded on better promises began (Jer 31 1; Eze 36.25). The noise as of a rushing mighty wind reminding them of the strong wind in Ezekiel's vision that made the dry bones live, the flame of fire probably reminding them of the Shechina, and the cloven tongues like as of fire, significant of an inexplicable and miraculous power of speaking in every language, constituted the solemn and public consecration of Christ's ambassadors for the founding of a Church which should fill the whole earth, and into which all nations should flow. Thus the Pentecost was openly signalized as the day of the mission of the Comforter.

The apostles had some experience of the nature of their calling from the mission on which Christ had sent them while yet with them; but now they came forth with a public testimony, not only to Christ's Messiahship, but to the great salvation purchased by His death. The Holy Spirit, as the promised Paraclete, took the place of Christ's corporeal presence. They were led by the Spirit into all truth, and the tongues were a conclusive proof that the persons to whom such gifts were imparted spoke by divine inspiration, and that it was not so much they as the Spirit that spoke the words.

50

The great effusion on the day of Pentecost did not mean a religious mood of mind or a pious enthusiasm, but that THEY WERE FILLED with the personal Holy Ghost. Though some have a difficulty in accepting the literal meaning of these terms, because they seem to imply a local limitation which, of course, cannot be applied to the omnipresent Spirit, it may be proper to remark that they have no more difficulty than that the Spirit made, preserves, and governs the soul of man. The meaning is, that they received a rich measure of the Spirit to fill the human faculties, and such communications, gifts, and operations as were needed to prepare them for their work. They were filled according to their capacity and mental conformation, but in such a way that there was not only ample variety, but room for increase and enlargement of the earthen vessel. Nor does the expression refer only to extraordinary communications. *The ordinary sanctifying gifts are not to be excluded.* One thing they all had to perform: to confess the truth; and courage was supplied by the Spirit. The transforming power of the Spirit so filled them that the timid became bold, the selfish self-denied, the arrogant humble; the ambitious aspirants after distinction ceased to seek great things for themselves. They felt that all gifts were from the Lord and for the Church's welfare; and jealousy and envy vanished.

The effusion of the Spirit made a great change on all the powers of the apostles, whether we look at their heart or at their understanding. They received a knowledge such as they never had before of the great work which Jesus had finished for man's salvation, and betrayed no longer the perverse idea that the Messiah's kingdom was to be of a worldly nature. They perceived in His whole earthly obedience the grand ransom necessary to procure a spiritual redemption. And they were in full accord with the Lord's instructions on all the principal topics of religion.

But special reference must be made to those extraordinary gifts conferred by the sovereign gift of Christ on the day of

¹ Goodwin's Works, vol. vi. p. 8.

51

Pentecost, which continued all through the apostolic age, and which were not only very various, but wholly distinct from the ordinary sanctifying or ministerial gifts which continue in the Church through all her history. The supernatural or extraordinary gifts were temporary, and intended to disappear when the Church should be founded and the inspired canon of Scripture closed; for they were an external proof of an internal inspiration.

In describing them we shall follow the enumeration given by Paul (1Cor 12.8-11). Of all the miraculous gifts the chief and highest was THE GIFT OF PROPHECY, which was intended — whether we look at the Old Testament or the New — to be more of an official than personal nature, for revealing the divine counsels for the edification and comfort of the Church. The gift of prophecy and the field it covered — whether we look at it simply as prediction, or as the revelation of the divine will in general — forms so vast a theme, that we can do no more than refer to it. What manifold and various communications were made by the prophets previous to the completion of the canon, how they revealed the present and future counsels of God, and how they spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost, are points known only to the Lord, who gave them their commission and message.

Another supernatural gift; was THE GIFT OF TONGUES, the power of speaking in foreign languages which had never been acquired; — a great work of the Holy Ghost, which gave a sort of visibility to the inward inspiration by which their mind was guided and controlled. Peter unaided could only speak his Galilean dialect, which easily betrayed him, as we see in Pilate's judgment hall; but now he could, in company with his colleagues, command without difficulty the attention of educated hearers, who heard them speak in their own tongue the wonderful works of God.

52

Many, interpreting the narrative of Acts in the light of the peculiar allusions to the gift of tongues referred to in the Epistles to the Corinthians, put another construction on the phrase. They interpret the expression in the latter case as a speaking in ecstasy. That is the modern German speculation devised to escape the full admission of the extraordinary miracle. But it is a misinterpretation, and violence to the terms used in all the passages. The gift was wholly miraculous. The apostles at the moment of inspiration received the extraordinary endowment which qualified them to utter new words, wholly unknown before, and to express by means of them sentiments and doctrines which arrested, convinced, and enlightened the mind of those whom the Holy Ghost was leading to the Saviour. Whatever difficulties we in this age may have in understanding the mode by which the operation was accomplished, there can be no doubt that amid a conflux of people from remote lands, no more appropriate or powerful means could be employed to extend the gospel than that use of foreign languages, intimating as it did that the gospel, unlike the limitations of Judaism, was not for one people, but for all people. It filled the hearers with amazement and admiration. To speak a new language by the sudden influence of the Spirit exceeded all the powers of nature, and afforded a sure testimony to the presence and omnipotence of the Holy Ghost. But in the Church it had comparatively little value; for tongues were for a sign not to them that believed, but *to them that believed not* (1Cor 14.22). The apostle, therefore, when he heard that this gift was coveted for the mere purpose of ostentatious display, took occasion to reprove the Corinthians for that perversion (1Cor 12.20-32).

An allied gift was the INTERPRETATION OF TONGUES, differing from the former only in this, that these interpreters, not having the gift of tongues, were enabled by the same Spirit to understand and explain the languages which were used. They thus possessed in interpretation what they wanted in utterance. In certain cases these related gifts were conjoined (1Cor 14.5).

53

The WORD OF WISDOM, the first named among the gifts, must not be reckoned an ordinary gift (1Cor 12.8). Without accepting the ingenious definitions which have been propounded, it may be affirmed that as wisdom, in the ordinary acceptation of the term, is that mental endowment by which one regulates his life and plans most surely to gain the ultimate end; so wisdom, as an extraordinary gift, differed from the former only in this, that it was bestowed on the gifted persons by the immediate effusion of the Holy Spirit. But as the apostle calls it not only wisdom, but THE WORD OF WISDOM, we must understand a singular faculty of pointing out the way of wisdom, both by their counsels and their life, to those who were of weaker judgment and capacity. And the same thing holds true of those who are in the same verse represented as endowed with the WORD OF KNOWLEDGE by the same Spirit. As the apostles, from the nature of their office, could not long reside within the bounds of any single city or congregation, and as they deemed it enough to lay the foundations of Christian doctrine as to repentance, faith, and the like (Heb 6.1), an extraordinary gift of illumination was given to certain members of the Church, in order that the new-born babes, as they are termed by Peter, might grow and increase in knowledge.

Next to these the apostle enumerates THE GIFT OF FAITH. We need scarcely remark that by that expression we are not to understand saving faith, the like precious faith common to all believers, but the extraordinary faith, or faith of miracles, relating to those displays of divine power which tended to the glory of God. It may be considered also as a display of confidence or world-overcoming faith in the presence of dangers peculiar to themselves or to others. There seems also to have been a certain counteracting or repelling power which in imminent perils from demons, noxious animals, or the elements of nature, deprived them of the power to injure (Mar 16.18; Acts 28.5). Faith was often needed to confront dangers with a confident mind.

54

Allusion is next made to GIFTS OF HEALING and working of MIRACLES by the same Spirit (ver. 9). The apostle distributes his classification of the extraordinary gifts in this way, because they were not all in the hand of anyone man, but divided according to the Spirit's sovereign pleasure. Though the apostles seem to have possessed all the supernatural gifts, it does not follow that this held true of other disciples. As to the working of miracles by a power far transcending man's energy or skill, we need not make a special enumeration of the many operations of that nature. They are said to be by that same Spirit, one and the same Spirit distributing these miraculous operations to each man severally as he pleased. They were sometimes called *wonders* (τέρατα), from the effect of those astonishing interventions, and *signs* (σημεία), because they indicated an efficient cause which was alone adequate to work such prodigies and to lead men to God their creator.

Another supernatural gift was the power of DISCERNING SPIRITS, which, for wise reasons, was conferred on many in the primitive Church to unmask Satan's devices (ver. 10). The adversary, incessantly active in sowing tares, never failed to send the blighting influence of false teachers, who ceased not to deceive others, and might themselves be deceived. Great evils, as the Scriptures everywhere testify, resulted from this to the Church. To obviate these perils, the Spirit imparted to certain members of the Church the gift of discerning spirits; in consequence of which these gifted disciples, in a way far transcending human wisdom, were enabled to warn the Church.

Such were the supernatural gifts of the Holy Ghost with which the disciples were amply supplied and adorned. And as is clearly indicated by Paul's exhortations to Timothy, they might be either stirred up and increased, or neglected (1Tim 4.14; 2Tim 1. 6). They were not possessed by all, but distributed among those who possessed them by a sovereign disposal, and probably according to the mental conformation which each one had received by nature.

55

Nor were they invariably confined to true disciples; for we find undoubted allusions to the fact that these extraordinary gifts were sometimes wielded by temporary disciples, such as Judas, to whom at last the Lord shall say: "I never knew you" (Mat 7.23). The power of the Spirit is seen in that agency that acted out the day of Pentecost. We can trace the action of the Holy Spirit in uniting a company of disciples in prayer and supplication, and in animating them to continue waiting for the promise of the Father. And the action of the disciples in all times and countries is analogous.

Not only so; the instruments by whom the Spirit works are prepared for service in an analogous way, that is, with the sole exception of the supernatural and extraordinary accompaniments. They are Christians first, then called to labour. This is brought under our notice in the most impressive and instructive manner, when we consider how the first disciples were prepared for service. Their gifts were there, so far as these were natural endowments; but they knew them not themselves; and they were required to wait for the Spirit in the attitude of humble suppliants till they were endued with power from on high; a preparation so necessary, that had they precipitately proceeded to work without that power, they would have accomplished nothing. To evince the greatness of the change to be wrought upon them, we have only to recall the ignorance and darkness which covered their minds, notwithstanding the instructions which they had received.

The Book of Acts narrates the operations of the Spirit. When persecution at length broke out, the disciples, pouring out their united prayers, were all filled with the Holy Ghost (4.31). The terrible discipline displayed on Ananias and Sapphira for an act of attempted deception, which proceeded on the supposition that they could overreach the omniscient Spirit that dwelt in the apostles and spoke in them, filled the whole community with awe,

56

and vindicated the honour due to the Holy Ghost. And we see the Church after a time of persecution walking in the fear of the Lord and in the comfort of the Holy Ghost (9.31).

Without tracing the history of the Spirit's operations, let me succinctly state the general scope of the Book of Acts. It sketches the movements of the kingdom of God; it exhibits men full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom (6.3, 11.24); it narrates the appointment of the labourers, and the disposal of their services. It shows, as Luther happily remarks, that the Holy Spirit was given, not by the law, but by the hearing of the gospel. We trace how men were summoned to serve God, and were owned as well as guided and controlled in the prosecution of their work. The sovereign Spirit, as a personal agent, directed the Church at Antioch to send forth Barnabas and Saul, saying: "Separate to me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereto I have called them." We see the Spirit prompting Philip to join himself to the eunuch's chariot, and directing Cornelius to send for Peter, as well as directing Peter to go and receive the first Gentile into the Church. We see the Spirit prompting at one time and hindering at another (Act 16.6).

THE TESTIMONY TO THE SPIRIT IN THE APOSTOLICAL EPISTLES.

The apostolic testimony to the Holy Spirit was given according to a fivefold type — that of Paul, of Peter, of James, of Jude, and of John. The allusions in the Epistles, and especially in the whole compass of Paul's teaching, are so numerous that they must rather be put together than expounded at length.

One preliminary remark may be made. The apostles take for granted, with full consent, the general corruption of man's nature, and refer to the Spirit as the originator and source of all the saving, sanctifying, and comforting influences which Christians experience (Eph 3.16; Rom 15.13).

57

How the renewing of the Holy Ghost is harmonized with the freedom of the will, they stopped not to inquire, as if these points were no part of their concern. But the fact of men's responsibility along with the proclamation of converting grace and the renewing of the Spirit, is set forth with a solemnity and urgency to which the solution of these questions, if it were possible to solve them, could add no further weight.

THE TESTIMONY OF THE APOSTLE PAUL.

In none of the apostles do we find so many allusions as is supplied in the Epistles of Paul to the Spirit's work in the full extent of His saving and sanctifying operations. Besides other reasons which might be mentioned, this may be ascribed to the fact that Paul had not known Christ after the flesh (2Cor 5.16), and received his revelations more in the way of inward communication by the Spirit than by outward intercourse with his Lord, though he also received the latter. And accordingly, in the memorable passage where he says: "Now the Lord is that Spirit" (2Cor 3.17), the close connection in which he places Christ and the Spirit shows how fully he apprehended their joint mission, and how emphatically he intimates that Christ is never to be conceived of apart from the Spirit, nor the Spirit conceived of apart from Him.

To the impartial inquirer who only seeks the truth, the Apostle Paul conveys, with sufficient evidence, a testimony to the divine dignity of the Spirit, when we find him saying in the Book of Acts, that the Holy Ghost spoke by the prophet Isaiah (Act 28.25); that the Spirit testified from city to city, that bonds and imprisonment awaited him (20.23); when he declares that the Holy Ghost sustained him in his ministry (Rom 15.19); when he appeals to the Holy Ghost, and calls Him to witness (Rom 9.1); when he uses the same expression, SENT FORTH (ἐξαπέστειλεν), to describe the mission of the Spirit that he employed, to describe the mission of the Son (Gal 4.4-6). But we shall find, as we proceed, other proofs even more express.

58

When we survey the names or titles of the Spirit in Paul's Epistles, they are numerous. Thus He is called the Spirit of God (Rom 8.9), the Spirit of His Son (Gal 4.6), the Spirit of Christ (Rom 8.9), the Spirit of Him that raised up Christ from the dead (Rom 8.11). If we look at the economy in virtue of which the Spirit is sent, He is said to be shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour (Tit 3.6). If we survey His titles as derived from the benefits and blessings which He confers, and of which He is the immediate author, He is called the Spirit that dwells in us (Rom 8.11), the Spirit of grace (Heb 10.29), the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of the Lord Jesus (Eph 1.17), the Spirit of adoption (Rom 8.15), the Spirit of life (Rom 8.2), the Spirit of meekness (Gal 6.1), the Spirit of power, and of love, and of a sound mind (2Tim 1.7).

The commencement of the Christian life, as contrasted with the previous sinful life, is uniformly ascribed by the apostle to the Holy Ghost. Thus he says: "No man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost" (1Cor 12.3); and again: "He saved us by the washing [laver] of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Ghost" (Tit 3.5). Whether we refer this expression: the *laver of regeneration*, to baptism or not, certainly the last term, the renewing of the Holy Ghost, must be construed as referring to the active operation of the Spirit at the commencement of the Christian life. As it is the shedding or pouring out of the Spirit (ἐξέχεεν) to which salvation is traced, this cannot be referred to mere doctrine. The personal Spirit is mentioned as the producing cause. If it is asked in what sense can men be said to be saved by the renewing of the Holy Ghost, when the salvation is in Christ, the answer is obvious. There is a series of truths of which no link can be wanting.

59

We are saved by the divine purpose, for God hath chosen us to salvation; we are saved by the atonement as the meritorious ground of all; we are saved by faith as the bond of union to Christ; we are saved by grace as contrasted with works done; we are saved by the truth as conveying God's testimony; and we are saved, as it is here expressed, by the renewing of the Holy Ghost, as producing faith in the heart. The special work of the Spirit in conversion is thus proved to be as essentially necessary and indispensable as any other link in the chain. The apostle further speaks of saving blessings which eye hath not seen nor ear heard, revealed to us by the Spirit (1Cor 2.10); and he adds that we receive not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that we may know the things that are freely given to us of God (1Cor 2.12). When the Spirit is called "the Spirit of faith," that is, the AUTHOR or producing cause of faith (2Cor 4.13), according to the uniform meaning of that formula, there can be no more conclusive proof that the commencement of the new life must be ascribed to the Holy Spirit.

There are three Pauline Epistles which are very full and definite in the elucidation of the doctrine of the Spirit — viz. the Epistles to the Corinthians, to the Galatians, and to the Romans. I shall first refer to their testimony, but by no means in a minute or 'exhaustive way, in the above-mentioned order.

One principal topic found in the EPISTLES TO CORINTH has reference to the personality and work of the Holy Ghost. It was particularly necessary to call the attention of the Corinthian Christians to the personality and presence, the influence and operations, of the Spirit, because they were counteracting his work by attaching undue importance to human wisdom, and pluming themselves on the possession of various supernatural gifts which they owed absolutely to the Spirit, but which were given for a different purpose. They dishonoured the Spirit, partly by self-complacency, emulation, and contentious partisanship;

60

partly by their readiness to think lightly of the old licentious tendencies and feelings for which Corinth had only been too notorious, and which all too plainly threatened to return.

By the Holy Spirit the apostle did not mean, as some have thought, a mere title of God or of Christ. He meant and taught the personal Holy Ghost, distinct from the Father and the Son, but partaker of the same numerical divine nature. He referred to the Spirit sent forth on His mission as the guide and teacher of the Christian Church, whose fellowship as a divine person was invoked in the apostolic benediction (2Cor 13.14), as the great gift of the Christian Church. He reminded the Corinthians, who were so favoured with a supply of supernatural endowments as to come behind in no gift, that they were the temple of God and inhabited by the Spirit (1Cor 3.16), and then subjoins a warning against defiling it (ver. 17).

In the most conclusive way, but without formal proof, the apostle introduces the PERSONALITY AND OMNISCIENCE of the Holy Ghost when he says: "The Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God" (1Cor 2.10). He is thus referred to as personally distinct from God; for He searches the deep things of God; and He who can fathom the plans, the purposes, and deep things of God, must be distinct in person, yet divine in essence. The same divine personality is brought out in connection with the rich profusion of extraordinary gifts with which the Christian Church was endowed (1Cor 12.4-6): "Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit: and there are differences of administrations (or ministries), but the same Lord: and there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God who worketh all in all." The Spirit, the producer of the gifts, is thus distinguished from the gifts. But He is also distinct from God, the author of the operations, and from the Lord Jesus, the author of the ministries. The import is to the same effect as that which

61

the apostle elsewhere expresses, when he speaks of one God the Father, and one Lord Jesus Christ, and one Spirit who unites Christians in the closest bond of union (1Cor 8.6; Eph 4.4-6). A personal will is ascribed to Him; He divides His gifts to every one severally as He will (ver. 11). To the subject of spiritual or miraculous gifts, which occupies a most important place in these Epistles, I need not refer, after the elucidation already given, except to say that they illustrate the peculiar economy of the Holy Spirit.

Other passages not less clearly teach the special action of the Spirit in the whole application of redemption. To some of these we shall now allude.

(a) "*Such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God*" (1Cor 6.11). The three verbs : WASHED, SANCTIFIED, and JUSTIFIED, have such an affinity to each other that they must all be put in one category, as referring to the absolution, sacrificial acceptance, and judicial justification of the Corinthians, compared with their former state as one of guilt, exclusion from God's presence, and just condemnation. One and the same thing, says Calvin, is expressed by different terms. How far these Christians corresponded individually to their high calling we forbear to inquire. But what we desire to place prominently before our mind is that these saving blessings are referred, first, to the name or merits of Christ as the procuring cause, and then to the Spirit of our God, who made the Corinthians partakers of them by His own effectual application. Plainly this operation of the Spirit is distinguished from the preaching of the gospel. The latter may be, and probably is, included in the phrase: *the name of the Lord Jesus*, which certainly intimates His merits, and may take in the further thought of the preaching of His merits. But manifestly something more than moral suasion is intimated as to the application of redemption. A power immeasurably greater — that is; the

62

Spirit of our God — is referred to as enlightening their mind and leading them to embrace the great salvation, and to be assured that they were washed, sanctified, and justified.

(b) "*The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness to him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned*" (1Cor 2.14). Here the apostle, after noticing the unsearchable glory of revelation, and tracing it up to the Spirit of God, sets forth, in the subsequent part of the chapter, that the spiritual discernment and saving reception of it are not less from the Spirit of God than the revelation itself. As to the title NATURAL MAN, it is not difficult to apprehend its meaning, if we are content to interpret Scripture by Scripture, without being encumbered by the language of philosophy. They who are so called are simply those having the animal and rational elements of man without the Spirit (Jude 19). The point of the expression, whether we suppose extreme depravity or not (Jas 3.15), is the privation or absence of the Spirit; and where this is, men do not receive the things of the Spirit — that is, the atonement and all the saving provisions of the gospel — and they cannot know them. I shall not efface the angles of this expression to make it less emphatic, nor apologize for the expression being used; for I am only an interpreter; and with that my duty ends. The natural man is he who is not occupied by the supernatural power of the Spirit. The phrase: "*to receive the things*" of the Spirit of God, as applied to the word of truth, is a common New Testament expression — meaning that through grace the word is not only viewed as true, but assented to as good (Act 17.11; 2Cor 11.4; 1Thes 1.6). That word the natural man does not receive. But when it is added: "neither can he know them," expositors and divines in general, of the modern type, transmute the words into *will not know them*. Heumann and others adduce as corroborative proof for this sense:

63

“He could there do no mighty work because of their unbelief” (Mar 6.5, 6). But it is a mistaken interpretation. The unbelief of Christ’s townsmen at Nazareth was such that they neither brought their diseased and helpless friends to receive His miracles, nor came themselves to hear His wisdom; thus limiting or curtailing His opportunity of conferring benefits. Or if we refer the words to the moral obstruction interposed by the unbelief itself, and suppose that Jesus, from a regard to the declarative glory of God, would not proceed to work miracles which were only to be met with scorn and rejection, there is as little warrant for transmuting the apostle’s *cannot know* into *will not know*.

Why the natural man neither receives nor knows the things of the Spirit of God is next subjoined. The way of salvation by the cross, described as “the things of the Spirit of God,” appears to him absurd; for they are foolishness to him. Though the propositions, as such, in which the doctrines are expressed can be sufficiently apprehended by the natural understanding, he receives them not, neither can he know them, without a supernatural discernment, taste, or relish for them imparted by the Spirit of God. The apostle makes no concealment of the malady, and draws a broad distinction between one who has the Spirit and one who has not the Spirit.

(c) This leads me to notice some of those significant expressions scattered over the Epistles where the Spirit receives express titles from the work which He performs in the application of redemption, especially this title: the Spirit of faith.

“We having the same Spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak” (2Cor 4.13). The title SPIRIT OF FAITH intimates that the Holy Ghost is the author of faith; for all men have not faith; that is, it is not given to all, and does not belong to all (2Thes 3.2). The

64

designation means that the producing cause of faith is the Holy Spirit, who produces this effect by that invincible call and invitation which accompanies, according to the good pleasure of His will, the external proclamation of the gospel. The faith, therefore, of which He is the author, is not effected by the hearer’s own strength or by the hearer’s own effectual will (Joh 6.44, 45; Eph 2.8; Phi 1.29). But it is also a fruit of Christ’s merits; for, apart from the merits of the Saviour, no benefit can be conferred or can actually take effect upon condemned men (Eph 1.3). And though the mode in which the Spirit produces faith cannot, in all its outlines, be fully comprehended by believers in this life, of one thing there can be no doubt, He takes out of the heart every hindrance and obstruction, pleasantly persuades the judgment, and gently binds the will — nay, works in us both to will and to do; or, to put it into the words of Jesus, “Everyone, therefore, that hath HEARD AND LEARNED of the Father cometh unto me” (Joh 6.45). The word of truth and the regenerating work of the Spirit are fully distinct, but always concurrent. The special operation of the Spirit inclines the sinner, previously disinclined, to receive the invitations of the gospel; for it is He alone, acting as the Spirit of faith, that removes the enmity of the carnal mind to those doctrines of the cross which, but for this, would seem to him unnecessary, or foolish and offensive.

The apostle, in a profound passage in the Second Epistle to the Corinthians, delineates the difference between the Jewish and Christian economy as two different modes of administering one and the same covenant of grace. He contrasts the two in the great points of antithesis between them. But what we have to consider here is their relation to the gift of the Holy Spirit. One important topic bearing on the difference of the two economies, is the supply of the Spirit in the New Testament as contrasted with the Old.

65

This is fully elucidated by the apostle (2Cor 3.6-18). The New Covenant, contrasted with that of Sinai, is called THE MINISTRATION OF THE SPIRIT (2Cor 3.8), because it was an essentially different economy. The New Covenant is called THE SPIRIT, not the letter, because accompanied with the mission of the Comforter and with the powerful operations of the Spirit in a manner unknown before. Among its distinctive privileges, the supplies of the Holy Spirit, which were of old promised by the prophets, are conferred in a wholly new way, and with a copiousness not conferred before.

The antithesis between the Old and New Covenant is expressed in the striking proposition, which is not without its difficulty: “the letter killeth, but the Spirit giveth life” (ver. 6). This may be taken as a general proposition; and when so taken, it will be akin to the words: “It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing” (Joh 6.63). If, on the other hand, it refers to the difference of the economies, which seems clearly to be the design of the apostle, the meaning must be, that the former left men without the quickening Spirit; or that the Spirit of life was not dispensed by that economy. When it is said, with special reference to the New Covenant: “the Spirit giveth life,” the import is that the Spirit of life is now communicated in full and abundant measure; that is, that Christ’s words are spirit and life (Joh 6.63), as compared with that shadowy dispensation which has passed away.

A brief explanation will serve to remove the difficulty which expositors have found in the passage. Some have thought that the Sinaitic Covenant was simply a covenant of works, wholly different in character from the covenant of grace. That supposition cannot be accepted, for the law is not against the promise of God (Gal 3.17). The apostle very often speaks of a matter in a certain respect; that is, not absolutely, but in a certain respect (*secundum quid*), and the statement here made must be so understood. The Sinaitic Covenant, so far as founded on the law of rites

66

and apart from the covenant of grace, which involved the promise of the Holy Spirit, was A KILLING LETTER, not only diverse from the New Covenant, but leaving men in a state of bondage and death, and imparting no relief.

A twofold view may be taken of the Sinaitic Covenant. It may be taken more largely or more strictly — a distinction to be applied as a key to solve many difficulties in the Pauline Epistles. Taken more largely, the Sinaitic Covenant, or the Old Testament type of religion, contains the patriarchal gospel, or the Abrahamic Covenant, based upon Abraham’s seed, in whom all the families of the earth were to be blessed, and thus as comprehending the promise. Taken more strictly, the Sinai Covenant — a subsequent dispensation of which the patriarchs knew nothing — was a national transaction between God and Israel, and conditional in its character. The immutable moral law, which existed before its promulgation and exists since its abrogation, was its core. The nation was specially bound to the law of a carnal commandment, to a shadowy priesthood, to innumerable rites and ceremonies, which were but the letter, without any supply of the Spirit, and which were enforced with strictness and severity. The whole design looked to the end of the shadow in the atoning work of Messiah. Strictly taken, the Sinai Covenant is letter and shadow — national, transitory, conditional, and burdensome in the whole character of its arrangements. Such was the distinction between the two. But it is necessary to add that it presupposes the Abrahamic Covenant, because God could make no covenant with sinful man but in a relation of grace. He could not have made a covenant at Sinai unless with a certain respect to grace, and having the covenant of grace as its basis and support.

When it is called “a *killing letter*,” and contrasted with the Spirit which giveth life, the meaning is, that the Sinai Covenant, strictly taken, or used as the mere letter, did not give the Spirit of life. But the apostle’s words do not imply that there was no Holy Ghost operating on the saints of

the Old Economy, or that there were not millions of saved men under it trained to eminent holiness and wisdom.

67

There were countless numbers of regenerate men in the Old Economy distinguished for a faith and wisdom, a holiness, self-denial, courage and zeal, redounding to the declarative glory of God, such as far surpasses all modern examples. But it must be noted that none of them received the regenerating grace and the Spirit of life which they possessed from the Mosaic law, or from the letter sundered from the promise. All who had the Spirit of life received it by faith upon the promise of a Saviour, and not from the Sinai Covenant. For under all economies, salvation and the supply of the Spirit were by faith. The measure of the Spirit, under the Old Testament, was comparatively limited, like the first-fruits; and it was given by anticipation. In comparison with the numbers composing the Old Testament Church, only a few were made partakers of the gift of the Spirit, while the vast multitude had no eye to see nor ear to understand. On these grounds the apostle calls the one economy the letter, and the other the Spirit.

In the Second Epistle to the CORINTHIANS, the apostle gives expression to Christian experience in many particulars. The Spirit is adduced as a pledge of salvation, and as giving an assurance of the participation of God's love.

“Now He who establisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God; who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts” (2Cor 1.21). That the efficacy of the Spirit is something distinct from the preaching of the gospel, is clearly indicated in this passage and in similar passages. The theory which identifies them finds no countenance from these words; for there is an influence of the Spirit on the heart of Christians, apart from the mere moral influence of the word. The apostle, as the founder of the Corinthian Church, speaks of being united with them in Christ,

68

and of their being anointed as a royal priesthood to make a common confession of Christianity. The previous allusion to Christ as the Anointed One, seems to have led him to describe THEM: AS ANOINTED, which implies something more than mere instruction through the word: It is unction for priestly service. He adds, “who hath also sealed us,” implying that they bore A SEAL or impress from God, by which they not only were themselves assured, but marked as belonging to God, who put a seal on them, which made them known to others as His property. Not only so: God gave them *the earnest of the Spirit* in their hearts. The term EARNEST (ἄρραβών), three times applied in the New Testament to the Holy Spirit, denotes a certain sum. in hand, a pledge of something further to be conferred, and it was a security that they should not be put to shame. Paul speaks of the Holy Spirit as producing these effects on the heart. For we cannot expound the term EARNEST merely of the miraculous gifts of the Spirit, which accompanied the first proclamation of the gospel as a proof of its divine origin.

“Ye are declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God” (2Cor 3.3). The Church of Corinth, a large flourishing community, was an emphatic proof of Paul's apostleship, and of the success with which his zealous efforts had been crowned in spreading the gospel. They were an epistle, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God — where we cannot fail to notice two persons, the living God and His Spirit, by whom he acted at first, and continued to act, on the heart of these Corinthians. By the Spirit we cannot there understand revelation, or the divine origin of Christianity; for comments of that nature only betray an adverse bias, and are not worthy of serious refutation. Plainly, the apostle distinguishes his ministry from the writing of the Spirit. He refers to the efficacious effect of his ministry, and ascribes it to the Holy Spirit. Nor does he appeal to miraculous gifts,

but to the Spirit's influence in effecting the spiritual renovation of the heart, as contrasted with the Old Covenant, which was written on tables of stone.

69

“He that hath wrought us for the selfsame thing is God, who hath also given us the earnest of the Spirit” (2Cor 5.5). The Spirit is again called “the earnest,” and the longing for the heavenly glory is connected with His operation.

In the Epistle to the GALATIANS, the apostle's doctrine on the entire economy of the Spirit is peculiarly full. This was due to circumstances which made it necessary.

The gospel, as preached by Paul among the Galatians, had found a ready acceptance, and been accompanied with the miraculous ministration of the Spirit, and with the most arresting displays of power (Gal 3.5). The Galatians, it is said, had begun in the Spirit (3.3). Before much time elapsed, the recently-formed churches were subjected to the test of false teachers. Emissaries from the Pharisaic party demanded that Christians from the ranks of the Gentiles should observe the Jewish rites as necessary to justification before God. In a word, these ceremonies, along with the doctrine of Christ, were to be retained as essentially necessary. The apostle, in writing this Epistle, assails that fundamental error with all his energy, refuting it from central truth and from their own experience in the past.

He shows that they had *not received the Spirit* by the works of the law, but by the message or preaching (ἀκοίῃ) of faith (3.3). This is the Holy Spirit, with all His gifts, as promised by the prophets to the Church; for the ordinary saving gifts of regeneration and holiness, as well as the supernatural gifts, are here included. These were not received by the performance of any actions of the ceremonial or moral law, which could only have filled their mind with a knowledge of sin and a fear of wrath. On the contrary, they had received the Spirit by the message of faith.

70

We are next taught that the promised Spirit was procured by nothing less than the vicarious death of Christ. This argument completely exploded the legalism of the false teachers. The donation of the Spirit is thus connected with the atonement: “Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made *a curse for us*, that (ὅτι) the blessing of Abraham might come upon the Gentiles, *that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith*” (3.14). The meaning of these words is: the death of Christ was the meritorious cause or purchase of this great gift — the promised Spirit. The final particle (ὅτι) leans on the words which describe the sacrifice of Christ. It is the connection of merit and reward, of cause and consequence.

To show, moreover, that works of law are wholly excluded, and that the great donation of the Holy Spirit, which was given to the Galatians at the founding of the Church among them, was not to be traced to doing on the part of man, but to simple reliance on the merits of Christ, the apostle adds: “That we might receive the promise of the Spirit (or the promised Spirit) *through faith*.” The Spirit of the Son — in other words, the Spirit of adoption — is further described by Paul as given only to those who are sons by faith, and partakers of the atonement (4.6). The proof is thus complete, that the Holy Spirit was not received by the works of the law.

The last part of the Epistle displays the work of the Spirit in another light. The former allusions were more to the Christian's privileges. The two closing chapters set forth the graces of the Holy Spirit and the Christian's fruitfulness. The same apostle who was solicitous in the first part to assert the liberty of the Christian, and who bids us stand fast in it, is not less solicitous to set forth in the second part the Spirit's renewing and sanctifying influence. Thus, with respect to Christian HOPE or patience, he puts it in causal connection with the Spirit's operation in these terms: we *through the Spirit wait* for the hope of righteousness by faith (5.5). The distinction between flesh and spirit, nature and grace, is next

71

described in such a way as proves the momentous importance of drawing a strict line between the two, of apprehending it in the Christian's consciousness, and following it out in the Christian's walk: "I say then, walk in (by) the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh" (5.16, 17). He adduces it as a proof of their liberty from the curse of the law, that the Christian is led by the Spirit (5.18.) After enumerating the works of the flesh, he specifies as the *fruit* of the Spirit — "love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faithfulness, meekness, temperance" (5.22). He calls these *the fruit* of the Spirit, as if they grew on a living, fruitful tree; and he adds that against such persons — for the allusion is to persons (κατὰ τῶν τοιούτων) — there is no law (5.23). From living by the Spirit he argues the duty of walking by the Spirit (5.25), and he concludes these duties by referring to the duty of sowing to the Spirit (6.8).

The Epistle to the ROMANS gives an outline of the doctrine of the Holy Spirit in an experimental, not in a controversial way. This Epistle was meant not so much to smooth differences or unite parties, as to confirm the Church in true doctrine. On the subject which engages our attention, the Epistle to the Romans contains very marked allusions which distinguish the Holy Spirit's work from the operation of Providence on the one hand, and from the objective presentation of truth on the other. The Epistle shows another influence distinct from the word though connected with it, in producing faith, and in leading Christians in whom faith already exists. To this I refer the more readily, because the celebrated Griesbach in two University-programmes laboured to prove that the term SPIRIT in the eighth chapter means nothing more than Christian character and disposition; and because many others, paralysed by these objections, have been in the habit of affirming that there are few passages where the sense of the word "Spirit" is more difficult. We shall find that it does not occur in more senses than one, and that it neither means influence nor Christian disposition, but the Holy Spirit.

72

This appears beyond dispute when it is said that the Gentiles were made obedient by word and deed, through mighty signs and wonders, by the *power* of the *Spirit* of God (Rom 15.19). That the miracles wrought by Paul are there attributed to the Spirit, is beyond dispute. The agent and the power which the agent puts forth are both mentioned in alluding to these miracles. The conversion of the Gentiles, in like manner, or the offering up of the converted Gentiles as an acceptable sacrifice, is ascribed to the Holy Ghost (15.16).

On the economy of the Spirit, in connection with Christ's Sonship, there is a noteworthy passage, though on almost all sides it is incorrectly referred to the divine nature of our Lord: "Concerning His Son Jesus Christ our Lord, who was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; and declared to be the Son of God with power, *according to the Spirit of holiness*, by the resurrection from the dead" (1.3, 4). Plainly the apostle does not allude to the two natures of our Lord as commentators expound it, but to THE TWO STATES of humiliation and exaltation. And the expression: "Spirit of holiness," does not refer to the divine nature, but to the dispensation of the Spirit after His resurrection, which supplied the most conclusive evidence of our Lord's divine Sonship. The effusion of the Spirit on the apostles and on the Church terminated the controversy whether He was the Son of God. The communication of the Holy Spirit — a gift competent to no created being — proved Him to be the Messiah and the Son of God, according to His own claim (Joh 5.19).

"The love of God is shed abroad upon our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given to us" (Rom 5.5). These words intimate that the Holy Ghost as a divine agent does a certain work; that He is given according to a divine economy; and that through His aid the redeeming love in God's heart is shed abroad in our hearts,

73

tasted and enjoyed, not only in the first stages of the Christian's experience, but ever afterwards. Plainly this is distinct from miraculous gifts and from the proclamation of the gospel. It intimates that the Holy Ghost sheds abroad God's boundless, free, unchanging love in our hearts, and that He is given to believers as a perpetually indwelling guest — reminding the Christian of reconciliation, supplying the constant experience of the divine love, and assuring him of its perpetuity as a gift never to be forfeited.

It is in the eighth chapter, however, that we find the doctrine of the Holy Spirit most fully developed, from different points of view. The apostle's object is to prove the certainty of the believer's salvation from the fact that they are led by the Spirit of God. He demonstrates that they enjoy the effectual operation of the Spirit as a blessing which has its ground in the surety — obedience of Christ its procuring cause (2-4). The argument is, that they who are occupied by the Spirit and who walk after the Spirit are exempt from condemnation. In other words, he argues that they who are free from the service of sin through the Spirit of life are by that fact proved also to be free from condemnation. The apostle had set in a clear light the connection between justification and sanctification on the ground of merit or purchase.

(6.1-13). He here shows that the spiritual life is secured by the effectual operation of the Holy Spirit. The entire section exhibits the Christian in the highest stages of the divine life, and supplies a rule by which the Christian teacher is to regulate his thinking and phraseology.

The apostle begins his discussion on the Spirit with these memorable words: "The law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death" (Rom 8.2). The two laws — that of sin and death, already referred to in the seventh chapter (7.23), and a counterpart law of life in Christ — are again put in direct antithesis —

74

that is, into the contrast of flesh and spirit, which we find pervading the whole Pauline theology. But why, it may be asked, is the Spirit called the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus? The entire expression is equivalent to this: the spirit of life residing in Christ and dispensed by Christ is a law of irresistible power counteracting the law of sin and death. It is the law written on the heart, by which the regenerate man is step by step enabled to resist sin and follow holiness. It is the law of the life-giving Spirit in the fellowship of Christ Jesus.

The apostle next adverts to several operations of the Spirit which deserve the most attentive consideration singly and collectively.

1. The first thing to be noticed is the sequence of operations as described in the Christian's experience. There are three distinct expressions, which are introduced in this order:

- (1) They walk after the Spirit (8.4);
- (2) They are spiritually-minded (8.6);
- (3) They are in the Spirit (8.9).

In the order of sequence the last named, however, comes first, as follows: — they are *in the Spirit* by the act of regenerating grace; they are *spiritually-minded* — that is, they mind the things of the Spirit when they are inwardly disposed, moved, and animated according to the mind of the Spirit; they *walk after* the Spirit, which refers more to their outward practical life. The sequence is such as proves that it is not sufficient to perform good works which challenge the attention of spectators, unless there be the inner change of character and disposition, which naturally weans the heart from the objects to which the natural bias disposes it.

2. The second thing mentioned in the passage is, that the Spirit DWELLS in the Christian (8.9). A running contrast between the flesh and Spirit is carried out through the entire section. And the indwelling of the Spirit of Christ is adduced as a conclusive proof that we are not in the flesh,

but in the Spirit; for Christ, the second Adam, received the Spirit as a reward for the performance of His work of suretyship, that He might impart the Spirit to all believers.

75

When the apostle subjoins: “if any man have not the Spirit of Christ he is none of His” (ver. 9), it shows that the participation of the Holy Spirit is not universal; and that only they who are given to Christ and redeemed by Him, enjoy the inhabitation of the Spirit in the Biblical acceptation of the term. In them He dwells, as in His habitation or abode, for ever. It is this inhabitation which imparts the spiritual mind, the mark by which the true disciple is distinguished; for Christ and His people are anointed with the same Spirit.

3. The Spirit is LIFE because of righteousness (ver. 10). Though the body is dead because of sin, this death is not regarded as a punishment or anything properly penal, but only as a consequence, still permitted to run its course, after Christ has fully satisfied divine justice. But the Spirit is life on the ground of Christ’s righteousness. As He gave life to all creatures at first, so does He give life immortal, incorruptible, and unfading to the new creature — that is, to all the redeemed of the Lord.

4. They who have the Spirit, mortify the deeds of the body (ver. 13). They are debtors, not to the flesh, but to the Spirit. The flesh, or the deeds of the body, they mortify, because they are the cause of death. They cannot so kill it that it shall stir no more; but they, by the Spirit, weaken it, and lop off its branches one by one.

5. They are led by the Spirit of God, and are thus evinced to be the children of God (ver. 14). The expression: “led by the Spirit,” refers to an inward prompting, impulse, and inclination, which so rules and guides them that they cannot omit duty or neglect privilege. It implies the helplessness of a child which cannot stand alone, but needs a strong supporting hand; for it is not in man that walketh to direct his steps (Jer 10.23). The saints of God, to whom the expression applies, are not only ignorant of the way, but when they know it,

76

their liability to stumble too readily betrays itself, and their natural reluctance must constantly be overcome. This LEADING is attributed to the Spirit of God, the master of the inclinations, of the will and the affections by which men are moved and animated, so that in due time they desire to do nothing but what they are prompted to undertake by the illumination from on high.

They are on this ground evinced to be the CHILDREN OF GOD; and this leads the apostle to describe the Holy Spirit as the author of adoption, and as prompting the believer to realize the privileges connected with the filial relationship. Philippi seems to me mistaken¹ in denying that the phrase SPIRIT OF ADOPTION can glean the Spirit who effects the sonship or transplants us into the relationship of sons. The analogy of all the phrases of this description — such as the Spirit of love, the Spirit of wisdom, the Spirit of power, the Spirit of revelation, and the like implies that He is the producing cause of the term following in the genitive. This is no exception to the uniform usage. The same Spirit produces the bondage to fear, and effects the adoption. On this great central blessing put in our possession by the Spirit, I shall not now enlarge, as it afterwards engages our attention in the dogmatic part of this treatise.

The other effects of the Spirit mentioned in this chapter are these: Christians have the first-fruits of the Spirit, and the Spirit helps them in prayer.

6. With regard to the first-fruits, the apostle says: “We ourselves also who have the first-fruits of the Spirit” (ver. 23). Speaking of the groaning universe waiting for deliverance, he adds, that

¹ He says, incorrectly: “Das *τὸ πνεῦμα υἱοθεσίας* kann nun nicht sein der Geist welcher die Kindschaft wirkt” (Rom 8.15).

Christians also who have the first-fruits of the Spirit groan. Some, with Grotius, incorrectly limit these terms to the apostles. James, indeed, speaks of the early Christians as the first-fruits (Jas 1.18). But the Apostle

77

Paul is not speaking OF PERSONS, but OF GIFTS; and there is only one tolerable interpretation — viz. that which refers the first-fruits to the commencement of the communications of the Spirit which are enjoyed in this life.

7. The other benefit is the Spirit's help in prayer (ver. 26). When Christians know not what to ask, the Spirit helps their infirmities, interceding IN THEM with unutterable groanings, while Christ intercedes FOR THEM.

The only other passage which I shall adduce from this Epistle is the prayer of Paul, that the Roman Christians might be filled with faith and hope through the power of the Holy Ghost. He ascribes both the origin and growth of these graces to the Holy Spirit (15.13).

The Epistle to the EPHESIANS, amid the deep truths opened up to a congregation which was specially prepared to take them in, interweaves the doctrine of the Spirit in a way which makes the train of the argument in the highest degree practical.

The economy in virtue of which the Holy Spirit is dispensed is thus exhibited in the prayer for the congregation: "Making mention of you in my prayers, that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may grant unto you *the Spirit of wisdom and revelation* in the knowledge of Him" (Eph 1.17). He asks the Spirit on their behalf from the God of the Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, the dispenser of the Spirit, on the ground of Christ's merits as the procuring cause. The import of the words: "The Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of the Lord Jesus," comprehends a full discovery of what was planned and effected by God in the work of man's redemption. We have here a numerous and varied class of blessings of which the Holy Ghost is the producing cause. It is what philologists call the genitive of the author.

78

"The Spirit of revelation in the knowledge of Christ" is a memorable title of the Spirit from the work which He performs upon the human mind (Eph 1.17), in illuminating the eyes of the heart, as it is here expressed, to behold a beauty in divine things of which it had previously no conception.

Notwithstanding the lingering remains of the image of God in reason, conscience, and the longing after immortality, there was not before this one spark from which the illumination of the understanding could arise only darkness and enmity (1Cor 2.14; Rom 8.7). The Spirit enlightened the understanding, which was previously alienated from the life of God (Eph 4.18), to perceive the truth of the gospel, as worthy of God and divinely adapted to human wants, and especially the truth relating to Christ's atonement. Not that the natural man could not with sufficient correctness grasp the thought in a speculative way; but it was much in the same way in which a blind-born man thinks or speaks of colours. When the eyes of the heart are opened, a glory is beheld in Christ's person and work unknown before; and a light is conveyed to the mind which produces a transforming change on all its powers.

Another passage in this Epistle not less emphatic is: "*Through Him (Christ) we both have access by [in] one Spirit unto the Father*" (Eph 2.17). The apostle, speaking in the person of the Church composed of Jews and Gentiles, says: "We BOTH have access, or introduction, to the Father," and he mentions the mediator through whose merits that introduction is effected. He adds that it is IN ONE SPIRIT, whom we possess as a Spirit of faith and love, infusing confidence on the ground of Christ's priesthood. The *one Spirit* can only mean the one Holy Ghost, which men of all nationalities, without distinction, now enjoy; and the force of the preposition: "IN one Spirit,"

is by no means to be stripped of its significance, as has too often been done by commentators. The intention of the apostle was to bring out with precision the difference of the relation in which Christ and the Spirit stand to the Church — the one as the meritorious

79

Surety, the other as the life-giving agent who puts us in possession of the whole redemption.

In the use of a favourite expression, the apostle again calls the Spirit a SEAL and EARNEST. "After that ye believed ye were sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise, who is the earnest of our inheritance" (1.13). To the same effect the apostle warns them not to grieve the Holy Spirit by whom they were sealed (4.30). As to the order in which this sealing stands, it comes after believing — that is, next after faith; and as to the SEAL itself, too much ingenuity has often been used in elucidating it. Without appealing to classical or Hebrew examples, it may suffice to say that the impress of a seal implies a relation to the owner of the seal, and is a sure token of belonging to him. From the three passages where the term SEAL is expressly used, we gather that believers are God's inviolable property, and known to be so by the Spirit dwelling in them. The sealing implies that the image engraven on the seal is impressed on the thing, or on the person sealed. In this case it is the image of God impressed on the heart by the enlightening, regenerating, and sanctifying power of the Holy Spirit. By that seal believers are declared to be the inviolable property of God (2Tim 2.19); and they are sealed to the day of redemption as something which is to be inviolably secure (Eph 4.30). Not only so: there is a subjective assurance which they acquire as to their gracious state and final glory. The Spirit is also called an EARNEST (ἀρράβων) as well as a seal — that is, a foretaste which is equivalent to the first-fruits of the Spirit, elsewhere mentioned (Eph 4.14).

The apostle prays in a second memorable prayer for the Ephesians, that they might be *strengthened with might* BY THE SPIRIT in the inner man, that Christ might dwell in their hearts by faith (3.16). The Spirit strengthens the believer by giving him a share in all the benefits and blessings which Christ procured, as well as by confirming faith and love, that the conscious indwelling of Christ may be realized; the indwelling of Christ answering to the confirmation of the Spirit.

80

When the apostle refers to the Church, he calls it an habitation of God in the Spirit (Eph 2.22), and, by another figure, one body and one Spirit (4.4). Nor does he stop at doctrine: while enforcing Christian duty, he introduces the Holy Spirit in many connections. When he warns the Ephesians against indulging angry passions and unworthy practices, he says: "Grieve not the Holy Spirit of God," implying that such things on the part of Christians grieve the Spirit¹ (4.30). When he exhorts them to prayer, he bids them pray with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit (6.18). When he warns them against intemperance, he immediately subjoins an exhortation, calculated in its exercise to exclude all tendency to the habit of intemperance by the spiritual joy and satisfaction which take possession of the Christian: but *be filled with the Spirit* (5.18); for the enjoyment of that fulness of the Spirit satisfies the soul, and leaves it no longer a prey to intemperance or any such desires. But in what sense can the Christian be EXHORTED to be filled with the Spirit, when we call to mind that it is God alone by whom the Spirit is bestowed? The answer is easy. It is of God's gracious gift when the Spirit replenishes any soul. But it is also a subject of exhortation. This is of the same nature with the exhortations in the Epistle to the Galatians: walk in the Spirit (Gal 5.16, 25). The Father, in the covenant, provided for the restoration of the Spirit; the Son procured the Spirit by His satisfaction, and lives to confer the

¹ See the beautiful remarks of Rev Robert Hall on the work of the Spirit. "Vindictive passions," says he, "surround the soul with a sort of turbulent atmosphere, than which nothing can be conceived more opposite to that calm and holy light in which the blessed Spirit loves to dwell" (vol. i p. 410).

gift; and we have only to receive and make room for Him daily, neither resisting nor grieving Him away from the heart.

81

In the Epistle to the PHILIPPIANS several allusions to the Holy Spirit are found, having reference partly to Paul's own condition and partly to theirs. Errorists had not as yet troubled the Church from within, but marked intimations and warnings are given respecting them to this congregation, of whom the apostle always speaks with the deepest affection.

After noticing the mixed motives of some who preached the gospel of contention, not sincerely, the apostle adds: "I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and THE SUPPLY OF THE SPIRIT of Jesus Christ" (Phi 1.19). According to his own declaration elsewhere, he was persuaded that all this would work together for good. Their prayer and the supply of the Spirit of Christ are not put together as co-ordinate. He means that all would redound to the victory of Christ's cause, and to his own highest advantage, through the supply (ἐπιχορηγία) of the Spirit, while their prayer would be no unimportant sub-ordinate link in the chain. As to the words here used, the Holy Spirit is called "the Spirit of Jesus Christ," not only because He is from the Son as well as from the Father, according to the eternal procession from both, but because the gift of the Spirit is derived from Christ's merits. He procured by his obedience and satisfaction not only the restoration of the divine favour, but the gift of the Holy Ghost, who is thus rightly called the Spirit of Christ. The more copious effusion of the Spirit is referred to the action of Christ no less than to the action of the Father, who gave to the Son the power of sending the Spirit, and of conferring all the benefits which were acquired by His death (Zec 12.10).

The apostle expresses his confidence that the cause of the gospel would be promoted by the aid of the Spirit of Christ, who would not only cause the truth to triumph over falsehood, but nerve him with necessary courage to seal, if need be, his testimony with his blood. But that no one might imagine that; these results would be given to the indolent or

82

lukewarm, the apostle links the supply (ἐπιχορηγία) of the Spirit with the prayers of believing men in the Church, to which he was writing; for he constantly asked prayer as a means of spreading Christian truth. Such is the weakness of human efforts, that we accomplish nothing unless the Holy Ghost is the guide and ruler of all our actions, and unless He is invoked, as it is here intimated that he should be invoked, by the Church, as alone able to bring help.

To ward off the danger of disunion and mutual alienation, of which there was no little fear (4.2), the apostle bids them stand fast in ONE SPIRIT (1.27); and at the commencement of the second chapter, he bases one of his arguments for unity, love, and concord on the fact that they had received *the communication* (fellowship) *of the Spirit*; for this communication evinces itself in unity and love.

Another passage referring to the worship of God in the Spirit is: "We are the circumcision who WORSHIP GOD IN THE SPIRIT, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh" (3.3); the contrast being between worship in the Spirit and ritualistic tendencies. The apostle depreciates circumcision; he speaks of it as nothing better now than concision, and by contrast he says we are the circumcision, the spiritual Church. The next clause is: *who worship God in the Spirit*, as the result of regeneration, and as deduced from it. It is not to be resolved into the vague idea of spiritual worship, as commentators too commonly put it, but viewed as worship in the power of the Spirit; the term *Spirit* being plainly the echo of the promise: "I will pour out my Spirit on all flesh." The reference is not so much to sanctification — though that, too, is comprehended — as to the adoption of sons; nor does the apostle stop there, for another

equally important point is, that this worship of God in the Spirit discovers itself in the exercise of rejoicing in Christ Jesus — that is, *as not leading away from Christ, but to Christ*, and inducing a reliance on Christ's merits and offices, and His whole mediatorial work. And in that proportion men abandon or forego all confidence in the flesh.

83

The Pauline Epistles, which yet remain to be noticed, contain only a few additional allusions, and our survey of them may be brief.

The Epistle to the COLOSSIANS, written to anchor the Church in sound doctrine against erroneous views, contains but one express allusion to the doctrine of the Spirit, though the whole Epistle implies it. The apostle, referring to Epaphras, says: "Who also declared to us *your love in the Spirit*" (1.8). The Greek exegetes, followed by not a few Protestants, throw this into the vague phrase: "spiritual love," as contrasted with ordinary love in the relations of life. The love was to be exercised toward Paul, who was absent, and not personally known to the Colossians; and hence he calls it "your love in the Spirit," because the Spirit was its producing cause or author. The love to the saints was a fruit of the Spirit, as is elsewhere described.

The Epistles to the THESSALONIANS contain the following allusions to the doctrine of the Spirit. When the apostle recalls their first reception of the gospel, he says: "Our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, *and in the Holy Ghost*, and much assurance" (1Thes 1.5). Various interpretations have been given of these words, but they offer, really, little difficulty. The obvious meaning suggested by the antithesis is, that the gospel was accompanied with converting power; and when it is added: "and in the Holy Ghost," Calvin makes the expression refer merely to THE AUTHOR of the previously mentioned power. Others refer the words to the gifts of the Spirit, especially the supernatural gifts conferred upon believers in the apostolic age to confirm the truth (Gal 3.2). Whether we accept the one view or the other, there was a full certainty (πληροφορία), a complete and perfect satisfaction, from which all dubiety was removed. According to this interpretation, the terms do not refer to the power with which Paul preached, as man, suppose, but to the experience of the Thessalonians who received the Spirit.

84

There are allusions also to the sin of despising the Spirit and of quenching the Spirit. As to the first, it is said: "He that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given to us His Holy Spirit" (1Thes 4.8). This seems to refer to the inspiration and supernatural guidance given to the apostles in revealing divine truth. As to *quenching* the Spirit (1Thes 5.19), the allusion must either be to supernatural gifts, as some interpret the passage, or to the testimony of the Spirit, which through sinful practices, indifference, or neglect, may be quenched. It is best to understand it of the supernatural operation of the Spirit, as the following verse, containing a warning not to despise prophecy, seems to imply.

"*God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation THROUGH SANCTIFICATION OF THE SPIRIT and belief of the truth*" (2Thes 2.13). The believing reception of the gospel was effected by the Spirit changing their hearts. The apostle, by the phrase: "the sanctification of the Spirit," means the cause by which their effectual calling was begun and carried out. The Spirit produced a full separation in heart and tone of mind from an ungodly world, thus setting apart all who were included in God's gracious purpose or decree. He works faith in them as the Spirit of sanctification.

When we examine the two EPISTLES TO TIMOTHY, only two allusions to the doctrine of the Spirit call for special mention. In the first Epistle, He who was manifest in the flesh is said *to be justified in the Spirit* (1Tim 3.6). Of all the explanations that have been attempted of this

expression, only two deserve attention. The one is, that He had proclaimed Himself the Son of God, and been put to death as a blasphemer, and that He was now raised up by His own divine nature, and justified in all that He claimed to be. The other interpretation, which I prefer, is, that He was put to death under the charge of our imputed guilt, as our Surety, but justified by the Holy Spirit when He rose.

85

The SECOND EPISTLE TO TIMOTHY repeats the frequent expression: “the Holy Ghost that dwelleth in us” (2Tim 1.14), which may be taken as the brief formula of all living Christianity. The charge to Timothy to keep the gospel doctrine committed to him, was to be carried out only by dependence on the Spirit, and in believing prayer for His influences: et Keep through the HOLY GHOST which dwelleth in us.”

The EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWS, which, with the Greek Church, I accept as of Pauline origin, brings out several points in the doctrine of the Spirit. As to the person of Christ, it sets forth how the Redeemer, through the eternal Spirit, offered Himself without spot to God (Heb 9.14), and how God anointed Him with the Holy Ghost as the oil of gladness above His fellows as His reward (1.9). The testimony to the work of the Spirit in the inspiration of Scripture is very emphatic, *e.g.*: the Holy Ghost says (Heb 3.7); the Holy Ghost signifying this (9.8); whereof the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us (10.15). The vast array of miracles and supernatural gifts with which the preaching of the gospel or the New Economy was ushered in is described as the accompanying testimony of God, with signs and wonders, and diverse miracles and GIFTS or THE HOLY GHOST *according to His own will*, (2.4). The two difficult passages which involve the apostasy of some professing Christians after being made partakers of the Holy Ghost (6.4), and where the parties have done despite to the Spirit of grace (10.29), are instances of men receiving only the supernatural gifts,¹ not true grace.

86

THE TESTIMONY OF JAMES.

The Epistle of James, directed against a nominal Christianity, or dead faith which had begun to prevail in his time, draws a line between nature and grace through all life. James contrasts spiritual religion with that forgetful hearing which, under the empty form, neither keeps itself unspotted from the world, nor exhibits the honour, the love, the benevolence which the law written on the heart prompts. He described that hollow profession by the licence given to the tongue, and by the vain boast of wisdom on which it plumed itself. Though he only once mentions the Spirit, the entire Epistle takes for granted the necessity of the Spirit's renewing grace. He bids those who lack wisdom ask it of God by believing prayer (Jas 1.5). He implies the Spirit's agency when he says that every good gift and every perfect gift is from above (1.17). He assumes the Spirit's work of regeneration by the word of truth as the foundation of all (1.18). The tenor of the Epistle implies that the Holy Spirit, the author of faith, first enters the Christian heart as His habitation, and then makes it a temple worthy of Himself. In the only passage where he definitely names the Spirit, he emphatically expresses this, *viz.*: “*Do ye think that the Spirit saith in vain, The Spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy?*” This confessedly difficult passage is better translated: “Do you think that the Spirit speaketh in vain? Doth *the spirit that dwelleth in us* lust to envy?”² If we compare these words with the common style of the apostles, who speak of the Spirit as the great Inhabitant of the Christian heart, no doubt can exist that the allusion is to the Holy Spirit (Rom 8.9; 2Tim 1.14; 1Joh 3.34), who dwells in believers, and

¹ So Klinkenberg puts it; compare Mat 7.22. If we take this view, which is every way preferable, we need not labour, as Owen and others have done, to meet the arguments of those who contend against the perseverance of the saints from this text.

² See an admirable dissertation by WITSIUS, de Spiritu concupiscente (Jas iv. 5,6).

instructs, comforts, and sanctifies them. One of the most comprehensive descriptions of a Christian is that he is a man in whom the

87

Holy Spirit dwells. The pointed inquiry of the Apostle James to the envious and contentious men to whom he addressed himself is: Can the Holy Spirit have His habitation in a heart replete with envy? And the emphatic answer, tacitly implied, is: No. But (that is, on the contrary, δέ) *He giveth more grace*. The meaning is: the Holy Spirit makes the man in whom He dwells to cherish no envy at another's welfare, but rather wish to see their blessings augmented; and the same Spirit gives more grace to him who is thus minded, or makes him the recipient of more grace. On that man he confers richer communications of grace. As to the interpretation of the passage, it is not without its difficulties, as the quotation is not found in so many words in Scripture. Some refer it to the antediluvians (Gen 6.3), others to the Book of Proverbs (Pro 3.34). Not to mention far-fetched interpretations, it seems rather to refer to Moses' conduct in the matter of Eldad and Medad, when Joshua, from a desire for the honour of Moses, would have forbidden them to prophesy. But Moses said: "*Enviest thou for my sake?*" (Num 11.29).

THE TESTIMONY OF PETER.

On the day of Pentecost Peter expounded and applied the prophecy of Joel as to the pouring out of the Spirit in the last days, pointing to the stupendous display of supernatural phenomena and of spiritual gifts, and declaring: "This is, that which was spoken by the prophet Joel" (Act 2.16). On another occasion he represented Jesus as anointed with the Holy Ghost and with power (10.38). And as to the giving of the Spirit to the Gentiles, irrespective of all national distinctions, he answered expressly that God gave them the Holy Ghost, and put no difference between the Jews and them (15.8).

88

But let us more narrowly examine the Petrine Epistles. When we examine what titles Peter applies to the Spirit, we find the following: "the Spirit of Christ" (1Pet 1.11); *the Spirit of God*, intimating God and the Spirit who proceeds from God (4.14); "the Spirit of glory," resting like the Shechina on the persecuted Christian (4.14). As to the ancient prophets, he says THAT THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST which was in them testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow (1.11); in a word, announced the cross and crown of the Redeemer. That passage furnished a convincing proof that Christ had a divine pre-existence, and that His Spirit, prior to the incarnation, guided the inspired writers in all their predictions. Attempts have been made, indeed, to explain this away; and modern divines, such as Weiss, who deny Christ's pre-existence, put this construction on the statement: that the Messiah Spirit, before He came, was working in the prophets. For such an evacuating comment there exists no ground; it is but a foregone Sabellian conclusion.

Nor are we to explain the expression which is applied to Christ: "Put to death in the flesh, but quickened by THE SPIRIT," in any other way than as an allusion to the Holy Ghost. It is neither Christ's human spirit simply, nor the divine nature of our Lord, though both interpretations have found almost equal favour with recent commentators. It appears from the following verse that we must rather think of the Holy Spirit in which, it is said, Christ went and preached to the spirits in prison — that is, by Noah as a preacher of righteousness. And we have only to compare this text with the passage previously expounded (1Pet 1.11), to be fully convinced that the reference is to the Spirit of Christ which was in the prophets. That the Redeemer was quickened and raised up by the Holy Spirit, is not obscurely intimated by the Apostle Paul (Rom 8.11). The same Spirit that formed Christ's human body and gave it life in His mother's womb, gave to Him the restored life when He rose from the dead. He who raised up Christ from the dead,

89

indeed, is frequently mentioned as one of the Father's most memorable titles or designations; and to prove that it was the Spirit who performed this work, we have only to recall the fact that the Holy Ghost is the executive in every divine operation (Rom 4.24, 6.4).

To the Spirit also is ascribed the Christian's sanctification: "Elect, IN (*en*) sanctification of the Spirit, TO obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Christ" (1Pet 1.2). The Holy Spirit, by the gospel, separates Christians, or sets them apart, in a peculiar way, from the common mass of men; and the blessings enjoyed are the fruit of the Spirit's sanctifying power. As the prophets had the Spirit, so, Peter adds, the apostles, in like manner, preached with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven (1.12). In the second Epistle it must be noticed that the only allusion to the Spirit is in connection with the inspiration of the prophets, who spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost (2Pet 1.21).

THE TESTIMONY OF THE APOSTLE JUDE.

The EPISTLE OF JUDE was directed against a body of licentious errorists who had crept into the Church, and were corrupting it by their doctrines and practice. These were evil, and there was no room to entertain doubts respecting their character. The apostle accordingly appeals, by way of warning, to some terrible instances of judgment recorded in Scripture — to the Israelites who were destroyed in their unbelief after coming out of Egypt (ver. 5); to the angels who kept not their first estate (ver. 6); to Sodom and Gomorrah and the neighbouring cities (ver. 7). Two references are made to the Holy Spirit within the compass of this small Epistle — the one alluding to the errorists, the other to the Christians whom he exhorts.

90

1. "These are they who separate themselves, sensual (ψυχικοί), having not the Spirit" (ver. 19). The adjective rendered sensual here and in the Epistle of James (Jas 3.15) is elsewhere rendered *natural*, or the natural man (1Cor 2.14). The expression means simply one in a state of nature, or unregenerate, and without the Spirit. This cannot be doubtful to anyone who considers the antithesis in which it is placed by three apostles. Expositors have brought more learning to the elucidation of the term (ψυχικοί) than was necessary. What a natural man denotes is easily discerned by the antithesis in which it stands to *the spiritual* man, who is one that has received the Spirit. The natural man is one who has merely natural reason, not the Spirit — that is, the animal man, as Melancthon expounds it — one living according to reason, like Zeno or Saul, though not necessarily in gross vices. As to the next phrase: *having not the Spirit*, it conveys the idea that the natural man has not the Spirit, and is the antithesis to what is said, that the true Christian HAS the Spirit. On the contrary, he who has not the Spirit is not Christ's (Rom 8.9). We must understand the Holy Spirit, and the apostle pronounces it an indisputable truth that natural men, whether addicted to the grosser vices, like those errorists, or practically exempt from them, *have not the Spirit* — that is, do not possess the Holy Spirit, who, as a divine inhabitant, occupies the heart of all believers, and sanctifies and renews them after the divine image.

2. The second reference to the Spirit in this Epistle, interwoven with other essential elements of the spiritual life, is: "But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, PRAYING IN THE HOLY GHOST, keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life" (vers. 20, 21). This implies a life in the fellowship of the Holy Ghost, a life of prayer resulting from that fellowship. The Christians to whom the apostle wrote are exhorted to build themselves up on their faith, which implies all the objects of faith as a foundation. They are taught that they are not simply to be passive, but to some extent active in the process, and especially taught *to*

91

pray in the Holy Ghost, who prompts the matter of all true prayer — opening men's eyes to discover their poverty, and showing them the value of spiritual things — exciting true faith — and imbuing them with right affections. All true prayer is shown to be prayer in the Holy Ghost.

THE TESTIMONY OF THE APOSTLE JOHN.

On the subject of the Holy Spirit we find comparatively little in the Epistles of John — less, in fact, than every one expects to find when he comes to the examination of it. The reason might be that the Gospel of John had set forth in the Lord's own words the most full and exhaustive delineation of the doctrine of the Spirit, and we are supposed to carry those disclosures of His Gospel with us in the perusal of the Epistle and Apocalypse.

Though the Epistle alludes more to the Spirit's work than to the personal relations of the Trinity, there are passages which show Him personally distinct from the Father and the Son. As often as the apostle speaks of the Spirit, he speaks of Him as communicated (1Joh 2.20), and as given to us (1Joh 3.24); and he plainly shows that he regards the communication as imparted to us by the Son. As to the names or titles given to Him, He is called the Spirit of God (1Joh 4.2), sent forth from God (ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ, 1Joh 4.3); the Spirit of truth, because He opens the mind to truth, and teaches it to distinguish truth from error (1Joh 4.6). He is called the unction from the Holy One, who anoints the followers of Christ as He anointed Christ Himself (1Joh 2.20, 27).

It is said, the Spirit is truth (1Joh 5.6); the meaning of which, in that connection, seems to be that one may securely rely on the testimony of the Spirit as an infallible witness, because He is the truth itself.

92

We have specially to inquire in what sense THE SPIRIT is said TO BEAR WITNESS in the much canvassed passage which refers to the THREE WITNESSES on earth (1Joh 5.6, 8).¹ Without subjecting all the opinions to examination, it may suffice to say that the WATER and BLOOD first named cannot naturally be referred to the two sacraments, or to the blood and water which flowed from the pierced side of our Lord, though both opinions are maintained by eminent expositors. We rather understand by the first witness, Christ's baptism and the miraculous events connected with it, which clearly attested His Messianic commission. We must understand by THE BLOOD, His departure to the Father, or the termination of His earthly task by the atoning sacrifice, which was accompanied by the most striking miracles (Mat 27.51). The THIRD WITNESS, that of THE SPIRIT, is none other than the effusion of the Spirit, first given on the day of Pentecost, the Spirit that spoke by the mouth of all the apostles, who preached with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven — the Spirit who accompanied their oral testimony with stupendous miracles, and who moved them in their writings. The apostle's words were accompanied with signs and wonders and divers miracles and gifts of the Holy Ghost (Heb 2.4). But it was not all objective. The Spirit's testimony was also internal — that is, He made all internally efficacious and available to the elect. ‘

The apostle refers also to Christian assurance when he says: “We know that He abideth in us by the Spirit which He hath given us” (1Joh 3.24 and 4.13). As Paul calls the Spirit the EARNEST, so John declares that the Holy Spirit given to Christians gives them a knowledge and an assurance of divine love.

93

¹ All text-critics and exegetes now let go 1John v. 7 as no longer tenable. It was probably a mere note on the margin inserted in the text by a subsequent transcriber.

I have now briefly to refer to THE APOCALYPSE, the only remaining work of the Apostle John. The salutation with which the book opens contains an allusion to the Spirit, but in a way peculiar to John. Paul's manner in invoking blessings on the several Churches to whom he writes was to ask "grace and peace from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ;" and he does not name the Spirit, because the Spirit was implied or understood in the blessings which were communicated. They were imparted by the agency of the Holy Ghost, who applies redemption. John, according to his peculiar manner, invokes grace and peace from the whole Trinity — from the Father, called "Him who is, and who was, and who is to come;" FROM THE SPIRIT, represented as the seven Spirits which are before the throne; and from Jesus Christ (Rev 1.4). The seven Spirits in the plural indicate the manifold and various operations of the Holy Ghost in the application of grace, with a reference to the seven gifts mentioned in Isaiah (11.2), or with an allusion to the seven Churches. Throughout the Apocalypse this style of description is repeatedly used to represent the Spirit as resting on Christ for the great ends which were involved in the execution of the Covenant. Thus, in the third chapter, we read: "These things saith He that hath the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars" (Rev 3.1). In the fourth chapter the apostle describes a door opened in heaven, while the writer says: "Immediately I was in the Spirit" (4.2); and he adds: "there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God" (4.5). In the fifth chapter, the apostle describes what he beheld in connection with the book written within and without, and sealed with seven seals, which no man in heaven or in earth could open: "I beheld, and, 10, in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb, as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are THE SEVEN SPIRITS of God sent forth into all the earth."

94

The design of these passages was to set forth the communication of the Holy Spirit in the infinite supplies which Christ imparts, as the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord (Isa 11.2), and as all resting on Christ.

The apostle says at the beginning: "I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day" (1.10). When Christ sends the seven Epistles to the seven Churches, He bids them hear what the 'Spirit speaketh to the Churches (2.7); for it is the personal Holy Ghost that speaks in and by the gospel, and that speaks in all the word of truth. And the book closes with the call: "THE SPIRIT and the Bride say, Come" — that is, the Church moved by the Spirit says, "Come."

SECOND DIVISION.

LECTURE 1. THE PERSONALITY AND PROCESSION OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.

I PURPOSE to discuss today the DIVINE PERSONALITY of the Holy Spirit. This is a point on which few doubts may be entertained by the vast majority of believing men among us. But it must not be passed over. Nor must attention be absorbed with the WORK of the Spirit so as to forget HIMSELF. All history proves, for instance, that to give exclusive prominence to the work of Christ while the personal Redeemer is left in the background, ends, for the most part, in placing a mere dogma where Christ Himself should be. The divine dignity of the Spirit demands, in like manner, that no obscuring influence shall come between the soul and the agency of the living person; and in the whole investigation on which it is necessary to enter, we must be upon our guard against being swayed either by the sound of words, which decide nothing, or by those refining speculations which are more shadowy than solid.

As to the divine personality of the Spirit, there are two modes by which we prove it. We prove it *a priori*, from the fact of the eternal procession, as we prove the divine personality of the Son from the fact of the eternal generation; for these immanent acts of God underlie respectively the personal distinctions in the Godhead.

96

Or we prove it *a posteriori*, from the unquestionable evidences of divine personality which are given in the sacred Scriptures in connection with His works. We shall begin with the latter, and proceed step by step, taking up in order first the PERSONALITY, and then the PROCESSION of the Spirit.

It is clear to every mind that, after His personality is established, no further proof can reasonably be demanded to show that such a Person must be God. If He is not an influence or energy, but a personal agent, it follows on grounds the most conclusive that He is not lower than Supreme God. Hence the objections adduced in opposition to the doctrine of the Spirit mainly turn at present against the proof of His personality. For to no created being can the actions which are ascribed to Him be fitly or competently applied.

My object is to show that the Spirit of God is as truly a Person as the Father or the Son — a Person in whom mind resides, and to whom men perform actions which are either culpable or acceptable. That divine personality is asserted against two currents of opinion which agitated the Church in early times — the Sabellian and Arian heresies, which reciprocally evoked each other, and are ever ready to captivate minds which miss the safe middle way. The former is the negation of the Spirit's personality, the latter the denial of His Deity. All who deviate in our day from the Church-doctrine are led by a strong Sabellian bias to consider the Holy Spirit as a mere influence or divine energy without personality — a theory called the indwelling scheme by some, but only a form of Unitarianism. The Arian or Macedonian opinion, which described the Spirit as a creature, is little favoured at present, but may at any moment reappear, according to the strange vitality which is the accompaniment of error. At present Sabellianism is the error of wide diffusion and power, and it is adopted by many who come under the spell of German theology.

97

These theologians evade the force of the Scripture proof by treating the passages as rhetorical personifications or figures of speech, even while they dilate on the advantages of using only the grammatico-historical method of interpretation. They speak not of the Holy Spirit, but of the COMMON SPIRIT OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH, which, in fact, means nothing more than an

esprit de corps, and detaches itself from all obligation to accept the doctrine of the personal Holy Ghost. How far modern theology is alienated from this entire domain of doctrine is known only to those whose special studies have led them to institute inquiries as to the German current of theological thought, and as to the multitudes in every land who have come under its influence. The personality of the Holy Ghost is treated by these divines as a dogma, for the acceptance of which no sufficient ground is found either in Scripture or experience.¹

When Scripture alludes to the Holy Spirit, the personal terms conveying the idea of MIND, WILL, and SPONTANEOUS ACTION are so numerous that they may be regarded, not as the occasional, but as the general, nay, uniform and unvaried usage; and it is a usage observed by all the sacred writers, without a single exception. It is observed by the Old Testament writers and by the New Testament writers alike. It is retained as the natural expression of their thoughts, even in passages where the writers, without the slightest trace of emotion or elevation in their style, write and speak as simple narrators of historic facts (Act 2.15), or convey plain and practical instruction (Eph 4.30). To deny that there is any allusion to a person in such references to the Spirit, betrays either deep-seated bias and prejudice, or lack of exegetical aptitude and capacity.

98

To evade or explain away these proofs of personality, two modes have been adopted, having not even the semblance of probability. The one evasion is, that the expressions mean nothing more than AN ABSTRACT QUALITY; and the other is, that they are instances of TROPICAL LANGUAGE. It may suffice to reply, that few examples of rhetorical personification occur in any history written in simple prose, and that this holds true preeminently of the New Testament, where the writers of set purpose make use of a natural, popular style. In these perspicuous narratives, there was neither occasion nor scope in any of the allusions to the Holy Spirit for a highly figurative diction; and when a personal agent is referred to, it is out of keeping with the nature of their composition to understand the terms of a quality or influence. We must understand one in whom intelligence and will reside. It would be the most violent and far-fetched of all conceivable modes of interpretation, to lay it down as a rule — as this theory must do — that whenever the speakers or writers, either in the Old or New Testament, turned their mind toward the doctrine of the Spirit, they instantly abandoned all the plain and easy style familiar to them, and resorted to rhetorical personification, *prosopoprea*, and the most high wrought figures which language can sustain, when their object was to be understood in the language which they used. To suppose such a thing is a sufficient refutation of that whole mode of interpretation. If Jesus and His apostles uniformly represented the Holy Spirit as a Person when He is not a Person, it would be the boldest personification ever found in any literature upon any subject.

Not only so; the apostles lived at a time when their assailants, the Gnostics, transmuted divine operations into emanations and persons. We may therefore, with Michaelis, pronounce it impossible — a thing, certainly, not to be believed — that they should so frequently resort to rhetorical personification in reference to the Holy Ghost, and thus give occasion to regard Him as a Person, if, in the use of such terms, they did not think of Him as possessed of a divine personality.

99

¹ Dr. Kahnis says, in the preface to his work, *die Lehre vom Heiligen Geiste*, 1847, of which only a first part was published: "was die neuere Theologie betrifft, so sagt Baumgarten-Crusius (compendium der Dogmen Geschichte, ii. p. 189, Anm. 4), dass der neuere Protestantismus die Persönlichkeit des Heiligen Geistes aufgegeben hat. Das wenigstens ist wahr dass die strengkirchliche Dogmatik diese Lehre ziemlich unvermittelt hinstellt, die Vermittelnde Theologie der man Kirchlichen Grund und Boden nicht streitig machen kann, meist negativ dazu steht."

It is not denied that there are passages where impersonal things are so described that at first they might seem to be taken as personal qualities. The two instances most frequently adduced are these: "The wind bloweth where it *listeth*," and "The blood of sprinkling that *speaketh* better things than that of Abel" (Heb 12.24). No man of ordinary capacity, willing to weigh the force of words, will for a moment doubt that these are figurative expressions, personifications which no man can mistake. The delineation of charity is so given (1Cor 13.1-8) that we may call it another instance of this personification. Every one sees that it is a vivid way of depicting the various activities of love in the whole conduct of a living Christian. But it is a wholly different case when we can show, in reference to the doctrine of the Spirit, that this mode of speaking is general, unvaried, uniform; that it is adopted by all the sacred writers with one consent; and that it is retained even in the simplest passages where they narrate facts or give plain instruction.

It is common among modern theologians, swayed by a Sabellian bias, to allege that the name "Spirit of God" means no more than God Himself, without reference to a personal distinction which, indeed, they do not believe; that Scripture contains such anthropomorphisms as the face of God, the name of God, the soul of God, as metaphors for God Himself; and that the expression "Spirit of God" is of similar import. To meet this misapprehension, it is not enough to show that the Spirit is possessed of divine properties, but that He is also personally distinct from the Father and the Son. The fact that the Spirit is named as occupying a co-ordinate rank with the other persons of the Godhead, supplies a valid argument against which no objection can be advanced.

It is also urged that the term PERSON is not Biblical, and is capable of being much perverted. But every thoughtful

100

inquirer perceives that the term "person" is only used for convenience' sake; that it is an ecclesiastical usage, like the words trinity, sacrament, and the like; and that it became current in the Oriental as well as Western Church, simply because a generic term was found necessary to point out the three subsistents in the Godhead. It has at the same time been always admitted that the use of this particular term was adopted only to avoid circumlocution; and that if a better term could be substituted 'for it with a general consent, no one would contend for it as indispensable. But with the doctrine underlying the expression the case is wholly different. That cannot be surrendered. Only remove from the use of the term every notion involving imperfection, as we do without difficulty when eyes, ears, or fingers are applied to God, from the mere lack of vocables to express the fit idea, and it must be admitted that in human language no term can be found better fitted to express the Church's meaning than the term person. Because we must use intelligible language, no difficulty should be felt in calling the Holy Spirit a Person.

The evidence for the personality of the Holy Spirit, it may be remarked, though often indirect, is not less convincing. For the Scriptures were not written in such a way as to overbear those who challenge every statement till they are subdued by evidence, and who commonly find or make the stumbling-blocks which they wish to meet, but for true inquirers, for receptive minds and honest hearts, which feel the need of redemption, and can be satisfied with a sufficient amount of evidence. The evidence consists in the uniform teaching of Scripture, and in the fact that no counter statements refute it. It amounts to this: (1) That the Spirit is not the Father or the Son, but distinct from both; (2) that He is an agent possessed of intelligence and will, power and wisdom, which come to light in deeds performed with a design; (3) that the masculine pronouns applied to Him, and the nature of the mission on which He is sent, attest a Person.

101

The Scriptures distinctly recognise the Spirit as a Person. We have only to recall the language used in reference to THE COMFORTER to be convinced of this. To compensate for the loss

incurred by the departure of the Lord Jesus to the Father, He promised that He would send another Comforter, who should take His place as their immediate Teacher, Helper, and Protector, and thus supply the want of His own presence, the anticipated loss of which filled them with trouble and dismay. When we look at the Persons referred to in that promise, it would be a perversion of language to suppose that a mere quality or influence is meant in any of the personal allusions. The sender is certainly different from the person who is sent: for we do not speak of sending a quality on an errand. Nor does ANY ONE SEND HIMSELF FROM HIMSELF, as the Sabellian¹ must put it when he interprets the words: “When THE COMFORTER is come, whom I WILL send to you FROM the Father” (Joh 15.26). Whether we accept one rendering or another of the word Comforter, whether we make it TEACHER with Ernesti, or HELPER, or ADVOCATE, or PATRON with others, it is obvious to every mind that He who was to compensate the disciples and the Church, of which they were the first-fruits, for the loss of Christ’s visible presence, was certainly a Person. The refusal to accept the Spirit’s personality in that text compels the interpreter, if consistent with himself, TO DENY THE PERSONALITY OF CHRIST in whose room He came. That is the alternative before him which no ingenuity can evade. And the absurdity is not less obvious of identifying the title Comforter or Paraclete with the impersonal gifts which the apostles subsequently received. That such a comment is untenable, is clear from the explicit announcements that the Spirit should teach them all things (Joh 14.26); guide them into all truth (16.13); bring all things to their remembrance (14.26); glorify Christ by receiving of His, and showing it to His disciples (16.14).

102

It is not possible more explicitly to distinguish a person from the works which he performs. Nor ought we to omit a note-worthy peculiarity in the THREE passages which refer to the Comforter. A change of gender in the use of the masculine demonstrative pronoun (ἐκεῖνος) forestalls the possibility of putting any other sense than a personal reference upon the words. Thus it is said: “The Comforter, the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in thy name, He (ἐκεῖνος) shall teach you all things” (Joh 14.26); “When the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who proceedeth from the Father, He (ἐκεῖνος) shall testify of me;” “Howbeit, when He (ἐκεῖνος), the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of [better: from] Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak, and He will show you things to come. He (ἐκεῖνος) shall glorify me” (16.13, 14).

The unbiased sense of unlettered men, who are beyond the influence of the theological currents, is alive to the fact that the meaning of many passages is lost, unless we think of the Holy Ghost as a Person, and not as a mere influence or energy. To lie to the Holy Ghost (Act 5.3), to grieve the Holy Spirit of God (Eph 4.30), are expressions which, as every reflecting mind perceives, imply a Person who is pleased or displeased; and they cannot, with any propriety or fitness, be referred to what is impersonal.

The Book of Acts, specially prepared, as we have seen, to exhibit historically the Spirit’s operations in the Church after the Lord’s ascension, contains allusions to the personal leading of the Spirit on the mind of all Christ’s servants, and in the formation of the various Churches. Thus He said to Philip, who had been directed to the way along which the chamberlain of the Ethiopian Queen was returning home: “Go near and join thyself to this chariot” (8.29); and after that mission was successfully accomplished, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip (8.39).

103

¹ See e.g. Dr. Weiss’ *Lehrbuch der Biblischen Theologie*, 1868; Grimm’s *Wilke’s Lexicon*, 1868 — both in a Sabellian tendency.

To Peter, when the deputation from Cornelius arrived at Joppa, the Spirit said: "Behold, three men seek thee" (10.19). When Saul of Tarsus was set apart to his great Gentile commission, which made him in a peculiar sense the apostle of the Gentiles, the Holy Ghost said to the prophets and teachers who were ministering to the Lord in the Church at Antioch: "Separate to me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them" (13.2). When Paul and Timothy attempted to go into Bithynia, the Spirit suffered them not (16.7). When the members constituting the council at Jerusalem gave forth the result of their deliberations for the guidance of the Churches in reference to the observance of the Jewish rites, they said: "It seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us" (15.28) — language which could not have been used if the Holy Spirit were nothing but an influence. When He commissioned the apostles, and either directed or forbade them to do this or that according to His will, the language attests a free and sovereign agent, unless we are prepared to abandon the literal sense of words and the style of historic narrative. Fritzsche, in his learned treatise on the Spirit,¹ correctly maintains — though the treatise is unsatisfactory & a statement of ecclesiastical doctrine — that it is clear as noon-day that Scripture speaks of a Person or subsistence, not of a divine influence or energy; and the Christian Church from the beginning, notwithstanding the deflections of individuals, may be said to have asserted the Spirit's personality, and to have based it on the Scriptures. Collecting the evidence supplied by the survey of Scripture, we may put the arguments for the personality of the Spirit under the six following heads: —

1. The personal actions ascribed to Him abundantly prove it (Joh 14.26; 1Cor 12.11).
2. His distinction from the Father and the Son, and His mission from both, prove it (Joh 15.26).
- 104
3. The co-ordinate rank and power which belong to Him equally with the Father and the Son prove it (Mat 28.19; 2Cor 13.14).
4. His appearance under a visible form at the baptism of Christ and on the day of Pentecost proves it.
5. The sin against the Holy Ghost implying a Person proves it.
6. The way in which He is distinguished from His gifts proves it (1Cor 12.11).

The glorification of the Holy Ghost in connection with the Church is still future. Passage after passage might be adduced to show that He occupies a co-ordinate rank with the other Persons. But the completion of the Church opens a vista into the future. The appearance of Christ among men ushered in a full historical revelation of the Son in word and deed; and the abasement to which He stooped was followed by an equally conspicuous exaltation. With the Holy Ghost it is not so as yet. He dwells in redeemed hearts bought with a price. He occupies a co-ordinate rank. *But His work is still unseen.* The personality and Deity of the Spirit are, however, one day to be displayed in conspicuous glory in connection with His work upon the Church, when He shall have completed the marvellous transformation. The final issue in the glory reflected from every redeemed and perfected saint, and from the entire body of Christ now scattered over every country, and visited from hour to hour with new communications of wisdom, grace, and power, but then seen to be united to their glorious Head, will be worthy of the divine workman who is carrying on His transforming work, and raising up a temple in which the Godhead shall dwell for ever. At present the divine personality of the Spirit is less perceptible, because it is not beheld in connection with the accomplished work. The redeemed are not yet perfect; the Church is not yet complete. There is still another stage of revelation, when the Spirit shall be glorified in

¹ Dr. Christ. Frid. Fritzsche, *Nova Opuscula Academica*, 1846.

connection with the work which He shall have finished and brought to its destined completeness.¹

105

ON THE PROCESSION OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.

The words of Christ on which this discussion largely turns are these: "When the Comforter is come, whom I will send to you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, who proceedeth from the Father" (Joh 15.26). These three things challenge our attention: (1) The mission of the Spirit by Christ 'from the Father; (2) the essential relation prior to that mission, and on which that mission rests: "who proceedeth from the Father" (ὁ παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς ἐκπορεύεται); the words from the Father" corresponding to what is said of the generation of the Son, the Only-begotten" from the Father" (παρὰ πατρός); (3) the present tense, "proceedeth." intimates an immanent ever-during present.

Some hold that the name HOLY SPIRIT refers exclusively to His office in man's salvation. But it is necessary to distinguish when truth and error are confusedly put together. The designation SPIRIT OF GOD is the distinctive name of the third person of the Godhead, denoting a divine subsistent, with intelligence and will, proceeding from another. The epithet HOLY, frequently conjoined with the term SPIRIT, gives us a nearer view of the Spirit's SPECIAL WORK in connection with man's salvation, and suggests an antithesis to every unholy spirit, whether human or Satanic. The procession of the Spirit is spoken of by our Lord in connection with a reference to the covenant of grace,² and doubtless the reason is to show that the natural order in the Godhead is also the order in the execution of the covenant of grace. Had we no other word of Scripture through which to think on this matter, the single title "THE SPIRIT of GOD" shows the relation of two Persons,

106

the one proceeding from the other, just as the title "the Son of God" proves the eternal Sonship. He is called — (1) the Spirit of the Lord (Isa 11.2); (2) the Spirit of God (Rom 8.9); (3) the Spirit that proceedeth from the Father (Joh 15.26); (4) the Spirit of His Son (Gal 4.6); and we should grievously err if we believed that these phrases have no significance. We ascribe no such procession to Him as is in any way associated with the idea of imperfection. We acknowledge, however, something fitly represented by the analogy of respiration, for it would be irreverence to imagine that there is no analogy in the terms employed.

The more the matter is discussed, the more is Scripture found to warrant the position that, in the scheme of grace, the acts of the Persons of the Trinity are found to be according to their order of subsistence in the Godhead, and are but the visible manifestation of that order in the divine essence. The Spirit could not be called the Spirit of the Father, or the Spirit of Him who raised up Christ from the dead (Rom 8.11), unless He proceeded from the Father. He could not be called the Spirit of His Son (Gal 4.6), or the Spirit of Christ (Rom 8.9), because He replenished the humanity of Jesus. Nor does it appear how the Spirit could be sent by Him except upon the footing of that procession by which He is the Spirit of the Son as well as the Spirit of the Father, and which is eternally continued without a past and without a future. The question is important in every respect, because it lies at the foundation of the MISSION OF THE

¹ This is well brought out in Schmid's *Biblische Theologie*, p. 167.

² See Lampe's Latin *Disputations on the Spirit* (vol ii. p. 151 ff.).

COMFORTER. And as to its practical results, Church history informs us that it is in the last degree calamitous to ignore it.¹

107

Some divines, in other respects orthodox, have recently taken exception to the eternal procession, as they also do to the eternal Sonship. Thus the author of an excellent work on the Spirit, while soundly Trinitarian as to the action of the three divine Persons in the covenant of grace, unhappily says: "The spiration, procession, or promanation of the Spirit from the Father, or from the Father and the Son, are phrases occupying no mean place in the theology of the early ages. Now, we humbly submit whatever reverence may be due to holy synods and to learned men — that such explanations are founded on an erroneous principle, for they are *analyses of human thoughts or words*, not developments of divine realities" (p. 82).² They whose sentiments are thus re-echoed (viz. Roellius of Holland, Dr. Wardlaw, Prot Moses Stuart, and the like) dismiss the subject of the procession with summary marks of impatience. But by so doing they cut themselves off from the Patristic literature, as well as from the Reformation, Puritan, and Anglican theology. The Scripture evidence in support of the procession is conclusive; and it is set forth in a mass of solid literature, from the earliest times to the present day. The question of the procession, analogous as it is in all respects to the question of the eternal Sonship, deserves and rewards a full investigation.

They who err in this article depart from the confession of a doctrine which the entire Church of God has taught and enforced from the days of the apostles. And the denial of this truth carries with it the most perilous consequences. (1) If there be no generation or procession, and if the names FATHER, SON, AND SPIRIT have respect merely to the covenant of grace, it would follow that these names are but official names, and have no essential relation underlying them. (2) It would follow that the Father could act in an isolated way without the Son and Holy Spirit, and that they, again, could act from themselves apart from the Father, without any natural and necessary relation of the one to the other. (3) It would follow that the bond of unity between the Persons was really subverted or overthrown.

108

These perilous consequences, especially the two last, may be repudiated; and far be it from me to burden any man or class of men with consequences which they do not themselves accept and avow. But the consequences which are admitted are one thing, and the consequences which follow logically from an opinion are another thing. The consequences may be of potent influence though neither suspected nor acknowledged.

The point to which we have adverted is at the foundation of the unity and distinction in the Godhead. The three Persons have a natural relation to each other, both in subsistence and action. They are one in essence and in operation.

The Biblical foundation of the doctrine that the Spirit is FROM THE SON as well as from the Father is explicit. Thus it is said: "He shall glorify me: for He shall receive of mine, and show it unto you" (Joh 16.14). The import is: HE SHALL, in the sphere of divine truth and revelation, DELIVER ONLY WHAT I HAVE TAUGHT, and by so doing, GLORIFY ME as a divine teacher; for it redounds to Christ's glory that no other doctrine should be taught but that which was derived from Him. Christ had declared of His own doctrine that it was not His, but the Father's who sent Him, and that He taught nothing but what He had heard of His Father — that is, the

¹ See an excellent paper referring to the practical importance of this question, in Rudelbach's *Zeitschrift für Lutherische Theologie*, 1849, p. 45.

² *The Work of the Spirit*, by William Hendry Stowell, London, 1849.

Son received all from His Father in the eternal generation (Joh 15.15); and the Spirit receives all by procession from the Son in the same way as the Spirit of the Son.

The same thing is elsewhere set forth as follows: “For He Shall not speak of Himself [better: from Himself] (ἀφ’ἑαυτοῦ); but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak” (Joh 16.13). As the Son said regarding Himself: “What I hear, I speak,” referring to His ineffable immanence in the Father, so the declaration that the Spirit should NOT SPEAK FROM HIMSELF, implies that He spoke nothing but what the Father and Son spoke by Him. There is a certain order, but no isolation of the one Person from the other; and the twice-

109

repeated statement: “He shall receive of mine,” — united as it is with the declaration that the Son has the essence, attributes, and perfections that the Father has — enables us to understand what is involved in this procession — viz. that the Holy Ghost receives the same numerical divine essence with the Father and the Son.

Such has been the belief of the Church from the first as set forth in all the creeds. It must be accepted AS ESSENTIAL TO THE PERFECTION OF THE DIVINE NATURE that the Father have a Son, and that there should be a Spirit proceeding from them both. The phrase: who proceedeth from the Father, in the present tense (ἐκπορεύεται), intimates an immanent, internal, ever-during act according to the unchangeable essence of the Deity.

THE DEITY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT BASED ON THE PROCESSION.

The SUPREME DEITY or THE SPIRIT is clearly established by the procession of the Spirit. The expression through which we think, whenever we direct attention to this doctrine, is the designation THE SPIRIT or GOD. Like the analogous designation “the Son of God,” it sets forth a unique relation, or a personal distinction, before any work was done. And as we say that the only Son is supreme God, not although He is the Son, but because He was begotten of the Father; so we say that the Spirit is supreme God, not although, but because He proceedeth from the Father and the Son.

The following fivefold line of proof, when carried out to its legitimate consequences, and all taking for granted the procession from the Father and the Son, furnishes conclusive proof of the supreme Deity of the Holy Spirit: —

1. The incommunicable acts of creation and providence ascribed to the Spirit.
2. Divine attributes ascribed to Him.
3. Divine honours and worship paid to Him.

110

4. The co-ordinate rank in which He is placed with the Father and the Son.
5. The name of God indirectly given to Him.

1. The creation and conservation of all things are attributed to the Spirit of God (Gen 1.6; Psa 33.6; Job 26.13). He who summoned the world into being, with its countless laws, adjustments, and concurrent adaptations, is supreme God. The conservation of the stupendous fabric by what is tantamount to a sustained creation, the knowledge necessary for a task beyond finite comprehension, the power that never faints, and the vigilance that never slumbers, argue the ever-present activity of supreme God. *But all that creative energy* which evoked the universe out of nothing, and *all the conserving Providence* which sustains it, *are ascribed to the Spirit of God.* To speak of delegation, as the Arians have done, is a hypothesis which needs but to be uttered to be repudiated. For to whom could such activity be delegated? Who could wield the perfections which such a task implies, but He to whom these divine perfections naturally

belong? The prophet Isaiah, as if to laugh to scorn the notion of a delegated activity in such a sphere, thus exclaims: "Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of His hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance? *Who hath directed the Spirit of the Lord*, or, being His counsellor, hath taught Him?" A consideration of the universe with the light which modern science has shed upon its laws, adjusted as they are with the finest adaptation over all the realms of nature, affords such a view of the wisdom necessary to plan, and of the power necessary to uphold them, that none but a divine hand was equal to the task. *But that hand was the Spirit's*. And the same argument applies to all the other acts of the Spirit.

111

2. As to the DIVINE ATTRIBUTES ascribed to the Spirit, we may choose out of the supply of materials furnished to our hand a few of the properties of supreme Godhead, which He is said to possess, such as omniscience, omnipresence, and eternity.

We find OMNISCIENCE affirmed of the Spirit when it is said: "God hath revealed them to us by *His Spirit*: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the Spirit of man which is in Him? Even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God." (1Cor 2.10, 11). The apostle says that he was in a position to unfold the purposes of God, because God revealed them to him by His Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. This is elucidated in the following verse by an illustration of a man knowing the things of a man by the Spirit of man which is in him. The term SEARCH, by analogy transferred from man to God, does not mean that the Spirit inquires to learn, but that He intimately knows. The language announces His perfect knowledge of the hidden counsels of God, and that the Spirit stands in the same relation to God that the soul of man does to man. The knowledge which the soul has of man's hidden purposes and resolutions is compared with the Spirit's knowledge of the secret purposes of God. For He is said (1) to know all things; (2) to know the deep things of God; (3) to have an intuitive knowledge with the precision and accuracy which the term *search* conveys; (4) to know them with the intimate knowledge with which a man knows his own counsels.

With regard to the attribute of OMNIPRESENCE or immensity ascribed to the Holy Spirit, we find a vivid description of it in the psalm specially prepared to guide the Church's worship on this point: "Whither shall I go from Thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from Thy presence?" (Psa 139.7). The remark of the anonymous writer in the Greek CATENA on this psalm,

112

that His Spirit intimates the Holy Spirit and His face the only-begotten Son, is not without probability.¹ But the evidence of the Spirit's omnipresence is put beyond all doubt. And when we trace the Spirit's presence as the inhabitant and guide of the believing soul, and of the Christian Church in all lands at one and the same moment, it is evident that He is as truly omnipresent in essence as He is omniscient in knowledge. For a mere creature cannot be in two places at once, or act at the same moment, in a great variety of ways in many lands. The attempt of the Socinians to blunt the force of this consideration by referring to Satan plucking away the seed sown in the heart of many hearers of the gospel is not analogous because it involves a multitude of evil spirits, and successive, not simultaneous action. To the other attributes we need not advert.

3. As to DIVINE WORSHIP paid to the Spirit, it is found in various religious exercises. It is the more necessary to put this matter in the proper light, because Arminian writers, with the concession too readily evinced by them, were in the habit of asserting, along with those who

¹ He uses the words: τὸ πνεῦμα αὐτοῦ φησὶ τὸ ὕψιστον πνεῦμα πρόσωπον δὲ τὸν μονογενῆ υἱόν

denied the doctrine of the Spirit, that we have neither example nor command in Scripture for the worship of the Spirit. That statement is groundless. Why it is not more frequently mentioned may, without difficulty, be ascertained. One reason why the Spirit is not more directly, as well as more frequently, addressed in prayer, is, that He is THE PROMPTER OF PRAYER, and because no one can pray without the surrender of the heart to Him, and without full dependence on His help (Rom 8.26), who moulds within us the prayer which the Son presents. But it is not true, in point of fact, that there is no example of prayer to the Spirit. Of the texts which fully evince it, let me adduce the ordinance of baptism performed in the name of the Holy Ghost.

113

We have only to consider the nature of the ordinance to perceive in it a solemn act of worship, an expression of faith, a testimony that He in whose name it is performed is our God, with a heartfelt surrender to Him in an act of new obedience. That all this is involved in it is clear from the words: "Were ye baptized in the name of Paul?" (1Cor. 1.13). That these three Persons cannot be put in any other category than entire equality, is obvious from the fact that if anyone of them were not God, two irreconcilable opposites would equally be the object of our faith, which is impossible.

Another proof of the same thing is the invocation of grace from the Spirit, as well as from the Father and from Christ (Rev 1.4). The words used are: "the seven Spirits which are before His throne;" but the allusion is not to created spirits, but to the one Spirit of God, described in the plural by the number SEVEN, to show the perfection of the gifts, or to point out their sufficiency for the Church's necessity and duties. That the reference is to the Spirit is clear, because Christ is said to "have the seven Spirits of God" (Rev 3.1); and there is no subordination in point of essential glory when He is equally invoked as the fountain of divine communications.

Another consideration evincing the DIVINE HONOUR to be paid to Him is derived from the declaration that the sin against the Holy Ghost can never be forgiven. On the one hand, that could not be affirmed if He were not God; and, on the other hand, it by no means implies a superiority to the other Persons from whom He is sent. It is to be explained by the nature of the sin which rejects the testimony, or quenches the operations of the Spirit, by which alone men can be saved. The Holy Spirit is never represented as a worshipper, but always as the object of divine worship.

114

4. THE CO-ORDINATE RANK in which the Spirit is placed with the Father and the Son, is brought out in not a few descriptive passages. We find them holding a co-ordinate rank when we look at Christ's baptism (Mat 3.16), or at the Pentecostal effusion of the Spirit (Act 2.33), or at the fact that by Christ we have access in one Spirit to the Father (Eph 2.18). Without expounding all these passages, and others in this connection, let me adduce the apostolic benediction: "THE GRACE of the Lord Jesus Christ, and. THE LOVE OF GOD, AND THE COMMUNION [communication] OF THE HOLY GHOST be with you all" (2Cor 13.14); words containing an invocation to all the persons of the Godhead, and in point of import tantamount to saying: "O Lord Jesus Christ, let Thy grace; O Father, let Thy love; O Holy Ghost, let the communication of Thyself be with them all."

5. The name of GOD is indirectly given to the Spirit. In the early centuries, the opponents of the doctrine of the Spirit were wont to challenge the orthodox Church, asking, Where is the Spirit designated God? Dr. Samuel Clarke was in the habit of affirming, according to his Arian bias, that the Holy Ghost is never spoken of as God either in the Old or New Testament. The language they desiderate may not be found in the express form which they desire. But we find an ample use of divine names 'applied to the Holy Spirit; and when we compare one passage with another, and with the connections of the context in which they stand, no possible doubt can remain on an

unbiased mind that the Spirit is supreme God, having a divine personality of the same kind with that of the Father and the Son, with whom He is named as of equal rank. It is happily remarked by Lampe: “It is befitting that *He who speaks by all the prophets and apostles*, as His scribes and amanuenses, *should speak less of Himself*, when the work abundantly commends the author;” a just and happy observation, by no means to be neglected. But there are express instances where He who is called THE HOLY GHOST in one clause is called GOD in another.

115

The narrative of Ananias and Sapphira is of such a character (Act 5.3, 4). If Ananias lied to the Holy Ghost, and his culpability lay in the fact that he lied not to man, but to God, it is very evident that in Peter’s account the Holy Ghost is God. (Compare similar interchangeable phraseology in Psa 95.7 and Heb 3.7.)

116

LECTURE II. THE WORK OF THE SPIRIT IN THE ANOINTING OF CHRIST.

Two great thoughts confront us in reference to Christ throughout the Old and New Testament — 1) that He is a DIVINE PERSON, and (2) THE ANOINTED SERVANT OF THE LORD. On the one hand, the child born is designated and accepted by the Church as the Wonderful, Counsellor, THE MIGHTY GOD (Isa 9.6); and, on the other hand, attention is turned to Him as the Servant of the Lord upon whom the Spirit has been put (Isa 42.1). And these two thoughts, though distinctly apprehended, are never disjoined in Biblical theology.

A twofold line of thought might here be pursued by us to show the constant agency of the Spirit on Christ's humanity. (1) The idea of man implies it (Gen 2.7); and (2) the great fact of the incarnation takes for granted that Christ's manhood was immediately filled and led by the Spirit. Many modern writers who deal with Christology, and write Lives of Jesus, are wont to describe the Redeemer in glowing language as a man replenished with an absolute fulness of the Spirit — whatever meaning they may attach to that term — but maintain for the most part an ominous silence on His higher nature and on His divine pre-existence as the second Person of the Trinity. But both thoughts must be combined.

117

The passages which refer to the Spirit as anointing Christ are chiefly given historically. The teaching of the Baptist on the anointing of the Messiah is full of significance. It gives conclusive evidence that the Baptist by no means taught, according to the views largely adopted by writers of the Life of Jesus, that it was the absolute fulness and presence of the Spirit which constituted all the higher element that was in Christ, or that this was all that is involved in what is called His incarnation.

It is worthy of notice that, prior to the mission of the Comforter to act with convincing power on the world, Scripture speaks of a mission of the Spirit conjoined with that of the Son. The Messiah is introduced by the prophet Isaiah saying: "And now the Lord God has sent me and His Spirit" (Isa 48.16); for, as Cocceius, Vitringa, and Lampe have conclusively proved, the words should be so translated. They bring before us a twofold or conjunct mission, which was appointed to take place together. They set forth that the Spirit of God had a part to act in and with the incarnation on the Person of the Messiah and in the whole performance of His mediatorial work. We need not refer again to the remarkable testimony of Isaiah to the anointing of Messiah by the Spirit.

With regard to the incarnation, it was a conjunct act of the Trinity, in which the Spirit is represented as preparing the body which the Son assumed, by making it His own in a sense not to be affirmed of the other Persons of the Godhead. Here I would make one preliminary remark. The incarnation was among the category of MEANS to a given result, and introduced by occasion of sin, which it was intended to put away. Many among the scholastics represented the ultimate design of the incarnation as the self-manifestation of the Son of God, thus making it an object for Christ Himself, and sought for its own sake. But it is to think unworthily of God to make it AN END.

118

Such a notion destroys the grace of the incarnation, and too readily leads to the conclusion that it is of the nature of God to become incarnate. Not less active in the same direction is the modern theory of Dorner¹ and others, that the incarnation was included in the eternal idea of the world, irrespective of a fall. We cannot affirm that either the creation or incarnation was

¹ Dorner's *Entwicklungsgeschichte der Lehre von der Person Christi*, 1845.

necessary, or that they were anything beyond a free result of God's will. No inner want was involved; it was only a self-moved act of love. That the incarnation is but a MEANS to an end, not an ultimate object in itself, is a position which must be held, if we would not open the way for that style of speculation to which we have just adverted. Nothing short of such means — for the incarnation was but a means, costly as it was — could suffice to bring about the end designed. The problem was, How could a guilty creature appear not guilty, and the partition-wall erected by sin on the one side and justice on the other, be abolished, that unimpeded love might flow forth, and man again be the temple of the Holy Ghost? The end contemplated was, how every attribute of God could be magnified, all the persons of the Trinity equally honoured, and man's wants so fully met, that from the broken fragments of the first vessel another should be fashioned with still larger capacities of happiness and glory.

For all His office the Lord Jesus received THE UNCTION OF THE SPIRIT: and here a question has been raised: Are we to refer this unction to the humanity of Christ or to the Person? Theodoret, who too much betrays a Nestorian bias, limited the unction to the humanity alone.¹ On the other hand, Justin Martyr and Ambrose, not to mention others, refer the expression UNCTION to the Deity of our Lord. Others, whom Petavius adduces, refer it to both natures. Unquestionably, wherever allusion is made to this unction, it must be understood as referring to the Person. The opinion that limits the unction to His humanity originated from the circumstance

119

that the propounders of that view concluded — as was by no means unnatural — that the expression could have no further allusion than to the sanctification of our Lord's humanity at His nativity and baptism; and they did not duly attend to the wider acceptation of the phrase in Scripture. The mode in which the Redeemer subsequently to His exaltation received the promise of the Holy Ghost, together with the power of dispensing such a gift to others, is of such a nature, however, as conclusively proves that the unction is competent to Him only as God-man² — that is, in both natures. As the humanity was assumed into the hypostatic union, we may fitly say, on the one hand, that THE PERSON OF CHRIST was anointed, so far as THE CALL TO OFFICE was concerned; while we bear in mind, on the other hand, that it is the humanity that is anointed in as far as we contemplate the actual supplies of gifts and graces, aids and endowments, necessary for the execution of His office.

The unction to which we have referred did not preclude, but presuppose the knowledge of divine things involved in Christ's pre-existence, and His divine fellowship with the Father before the world was. That was not an ideal, but a real pre-existence, and included an immediate intuitive knowledge of divine things. The Lord Jesus affirmed of Himself such things as are not competent to any finite being when He said: "No man hath ascended up to heaven but He that came down from heaven, the Son of man who is in heaven" (Joh 3.13). As our Lord existed from eternity, and as an intimate relation obtained between Him and the Father before the foundation of the world, His knowledge of divine things was intuitive and absolutely perfect to such an extent that He could say: "We speak what we know, and testify what we have seen" (Joh 3.11). He refers to Himself as participant of the divine counsels, and as being in heaven before He came down to earth.

120

¹ ἰχρίσθη δὲ οὐχ ὥς θεὸς ἀλλὰ ὥς ἀνθρώπος (*Epitom. div. Decret.* ch. 11). See Petavius, *Theol. Dog. de Incarnati*, lib. xi. c. 8.

² Maestricht puts it happily thus: "Proinde unctus est quoad *utramque* naturam, quatenus unctio designat vocationem; sed quoad *humanam* tantum, quatenus notat *qualificationem*" (*Theor. Pract. Theol.* p. 426).

And the additional clause: “the Son of man who is in heaven,” — which is not only genuine, but essential to the sense — describes, in contrast with the clause: “no man ascended up to heaven,” the sense in which He affirmed that He testified what He had seen. With the omnipresence of the divine nature He was in heaven while He spoke these words on the earth; for we must by no means translate the words (ὁ ὢν) “who WAS in heaven,” but “who IS in heaven.”

The remark of Owen is worthy of deep consideration. “The only singular immediate act,” says he,¹ “of the Person of the Son on the human nature, was the assumption of it into subsistence with Himself.” That mode of contemplating the Person of Christ is Biblical. But that we may not be ingulfed in one-sidedness, it must be added that the Spirit, according to the order of the Trinity, interposes His power only to execute the will of the Son.² And so far is this from interfering with the glory of the Son, that it rather reveals Him more conspicuously, that in the work of redemption the operations of the Spirit are next in order to those of the Son.

The two natures of our Lord actively concurred in every mediatorial act. If He assumed human nature in the true and proper sense of the term into union with His divine person, that position must be maintained. The Socinian objection, that there could be no further need for the Spirit’s agency, and, in fact, no room for it — if the divine nature of our Lord was itself active in the whole range of Christ’s mediation — is meant to perplex the question, because these men deny the existence of any divine nature in Christ’s person. That style of reasoning is futile; for the question simply is, What do the Scriptures teach? Do they affirm that *Christ was anointed by the Spirit?* (Act 10.38); that He was led out into the wilderness by the Spirit?

121

that He returned in the power of the Spirit to begin His public ministry? that He performed His miracles by the Spirit? and that, previously to His ascension, He gave commandments by the Spirit to the disciples whom He had chosen (Act 1.2)? No warrant exists for anything akin to the depotentiation theory which denudes Him of essential attributes, and puts His humanity on a mere level with that of other men; and as little warrant exists for denying the Spirit’s work on Christ’s humanity in every mediatorial act which He performed on earth or performs in heaven.

The unction of the Spirit must be traced in all His personal and official gifts. In Christ the Person and office coincided. In His divine Person He was the substance of all the offices to which He was appointed and fitted by the Holy Spirit to discharge. The offices would be nothing apart from Himself, and could have neither coherence nor validity without the underlying Person. But He was also anointed with the Spirit, nay, the absolute receiver of the Spirit, poured on Him in such a plenitude that it was not by measure (Joh 3.34).

As to the UNCTION of the Lord Jesus by the Spirit, it was different according to the THREE GRADES successively imparted. The *first* grade was at the incarnation; the *second* coincided with His baptism; the *third* and highest grade was at the ascension, when He sat down on His mediatorial throne and received from the Father the gift of the Holy Ghost to bestow upon His Church in abundant measure.

I. The first grade of this anointing with the Spirit took place at the incarnation or nativity. The words, as given by Luke, contain a brief description of the supernatural conception: “The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: wherefore that holy thing that shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God” (Luk 1.35). And they show that the Lord’s humanity was sinless, and that it never was in Adam’s covenant.

122

¹ Owen, vol. iii. p, 160, Edin. ed.

² *Vid.* Lampe’s excellent Disputationes Philol. Theol., *de Spiritu Sancto*, vol. ii.

The second clause describes more fully what was said in the first clause, according to the exegetical rule, that in corresponding members of this sort the darker is to be explained by the clearer. The import of both clauses is, that the Holy Spirit was the former of Christ's human nature; and that the Son, by assuming it into personal union, made it His own by a right peculiar to Himself — that is, by a union personal and incommunicable to the other Persons of the Godhead.¹ And these words are important as serving to refute the ancient and recent Errorists, who disliked the idea that our Lord's flesh was formed by the Spirit from Mary's substance, and fancied to themselves a certain heavenly flesh brought with Him from above.

Another point demanding notice is the statement that the holy thing born of Mary should be called THE SON OF GOD. In construing this clause, we must make "the holy thing born of thee" the nominative of the sentence, and "shall be called Son of God" the predicate. They who² put the adjective HOLY as the predicate thus: "that which is to be born shall be called holy," not only misapprehend the grammatical construction, but eliminate the truth which the clause was intended to convey. The true meaning is: the holy thing born of thee shall, in virtue of the hypostatic union, be also called the Son of God, thus asserting the unity of the Person. The words (διὸ καί) intimate that there is both an eternal generation and a holy thing begotten, created when assumed, and assumed when created, and that the result is not two Persons, but one; for the holy thing to which Mary gave birth is ALSO called the Son of God.

123

This explanation meets the argument of the Unitarians, whose plea, derived from this verse, is, that the future tense, "shall be called," implies that Christ was not the Son of God by eternal pre-existence, and that He only began to be the Son of God when He took the flesh; thus confounding the difference between His eternal Sonship and His being called so in the knowledge and confession of the Church — that is, the difference between being and manifestation. The nativity by the Holy Spirit from the Virgin could not make humanity the Son of God. As the humanity, however, was assumed into personal union by the Son, it also is called the Son of God. Everything included in the Spirit's work on Christ's humanity is of the last importance. Thus it is abundantly evident from Scripture — unless we give an arbitrary meaning to the phrase: "The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee" (Luk 1.35) — that the Lord's humanity was produced by the Holy Ghost in a supernatural way, which at once obviated *the possibility of contracting guilt from Adam*, or of deriving any transmitted corruption, and which, by an act of infinite wisdom and power, put Him within the human family as a kinsman-Redeemer, and yet exempted Him from being in Adam's covenant; for He was the second Adam, the Son of man.

Nor did the mother need an immaculate nature. The question — How could pure humanity be derived from a defiled source which uniformly entails corruption on others? — is a difficulty which has staggered many — the Valentinians, the Anabaptists, the Quakers, and some modern Plymouthists on the one side, and the entire Church of Rome on the other. The sects above named attempted to meet the difficulty by representing Mary as but a pipe or channel (σωλήν) through which a heavenly body or flesh, immediately created by the Holy Ghost, but not formed from her substance, was introduced into the world. But on that principle the Lord Jesus would belong to another order of beings, and would not be our brother, born into our family (Heb 2.14).

¹ It was united to Him in such a sense that it also (kai,) is the Son of God. That holy thing began to be at the conception by the Spirit. The words of thee (ἐκ σοῦ), deleted by many in the phrase, should probably be retained in the text, for they are found in such a number of Fathers — Justin, Irenaeus, Tertullian, Cyprian, Athanasius, Chrysostom, Epiphanius, Jerome) — that the balance of authority from this source alone goes far to counter-balance the evidence of faulty manuscripts against them.

² So Bornemann and the revised version incorrectly.

124

And redemption was only possible when effected by a GOEL or kinsman-Redeemer. As to the way in which the Romish Church met the difficulty in her last Council, the presupposition (or, as theologians express it, the *πρῶτον ψεύδος*) from which she started can be no other than the repetition of the exaggerated theory of Flacius on the subject of original sin, from which the entire Protestant Church, Lutheran and Reformed, recoiled with equal horror — viz. that sin had become the very essence of man. The divines who confuted Flacius at once saw that on such a supposition an incarnation would have been impossible, and replied that human nature, corrupted as it was by the sin of Adam, was still, as a work of God, good, and capable of redemption; that we can distinguish in idea between the good work of God and the vitiating taint super-induced upon it, though we cannot separate these elements; and that God can do both — redeem His creature, and separate the sin. On the ground of this distinction, which is pre-supposed in the whole redeeming and regenerating grace of God, nature could be made available as the substance out of which, by the miraculous intervention of the Holy Ghost, the sinless humanity of our Lord could be produced. The theory of Rome makes a sinless mother indispensable; and it is as faulty as that of the above-named sects, which resorted in their perplexity to the conclusion that Mary was but a medium of transmission. If both these tendencies egregiously fail by regarding original sin as an insuperable difficulty to the supposition that our Lord derived His flesh from a fallen mother, Schleiermacher and his school, from antagonism to the supernatural in miracle, place themselves on a Pelagian view of humanity, and concede that there was nothing more than the ordinary generation. As to the theory of Menken and Irving, that our Lord took fallen humanity, it wholly mistakes the great end of the supernatural conception. According to the first promise given in Genesis (3.15), and announced by

125

Isaiah a second time, the Saviour was to be born of a virgin (Isa 7.14). The Holy Spirit was upon Him, accordingly, from the moment of His conception, displaying His power in supplying Him with the endowments, capacities, and gifts — physical, intellectual, and spiritual — which were necessary for His high work. As sanctification belongs to the Spirit's operations, there can be no doubt that everything required for the sanctification of the Lord's humanity WI18 plentifully supplied by the agency of the Holy Spirit, who warded off every taint from whatever quarter it could possibly approach Him. Not only so; the soul of Christ, from the first moment of conscious existence, was filled with actual communications of the Spirit for such exercises of trust, and love, and holy affections as were necessary in the experience of Him who came as the second Adam, with the image of God restored in all its fulness (Psa 22.10). He who made man a temple of God at first, and who was restoring it in the Incarnate Son, was incessantly active in conferring every conceivable gift, and in signally augmenting these gifts in ever-increasing measure at successive stages for the great work to be performed. All this was for His private life.

“And the child grew and waxed strong in Spirit (πνεύματι)¹, filled with wisdom” (Luk 2.40). This passage proves that we must ascribe to the Spirit all the progress in Christ's mental and spiritual development, and all His advancement in knowledge and holiness. He went through the successive stages of acquirement in a manner absolutely unique, because His humanity had its existence in the personal union. He was filled by the Spirit with a wisdom which replenished all the powers of His rational nature. Though the increase, at first sight, seems incompatible with His being the Son of God, yet perfection is compatible with progress in a created nature, and He must needs be made like to His brethren. He knew as a boy what He had not acquired as a child; and as all the gifts were supplied to Him by the Spirit,

¹ This reading has a preponderance of authority in its favour.

126

we can trace the following stages which come to light in our Lord's history. The Spirit was given to Him, in consequence of the personal union, in a measure which no mere man could possess, constituting the link between the Deity and humanity, perpetually imparting the full consciousness of His personality, and making Him inwardly aware of His divine Sonship at all times (Luk 2.49).

Thus the Spirit at the incarnation became the great guiding principle of all Christ's earthly history, according to the order of operation that belongs to the Trinity. It was the Holy Spirit that formed His human nature and directed the tenor of His earthly life. His human nature had no distinct personality, nor any self-directing principle (τὸ ἡγεμονικόν), apart from the personal union; and as He was not less perfect, but more perfect than any other of the family of man on this account, it must be carefully remembered that the full consciousness that He was the only Son of God, who came from God and went to God (Joh 13.3), flowed perpetually from the Spirit. *The communication from the one nature to the other was by the Spirit*, the EXECUTIVE of all the works of God. Hence He never spoke or acted but at the proper time (Joh 7.6). He had His hour for everything that He performed, and a full consciousness derived from the Spirit that He was the Son of God. The Godhead dwelling in Him made all due communications to His manhood by the Holy Ghost. All the evangelists, but especially the Gospel of John, show that the Spirit prompted all His actions, and gave direction to all His words. Nothing was undertaken but by the Spirit's direction; nothing spoken but by His guidance; nothing executed but by His power. This anointing with the Spirit, foretold in prophecy and accomplished in fact, may be traced in all His official words and deeds. The personal life of Christ as the God-man full of the Spirit, was the natural basis of all His official activity.

127

II. THE SECOND GRADE of the donation or unction of the Holy Spirit was at His BAPTISM. Before Jesus appeared invested with HIS PUBLIC OFFICE, the Holy Spirit had formed the human nature, and replenished it with perfect wisdom and faultless holiness; and the baptism, AS THE PUBLIC INAUGURATION of the Lord Jesus INTO HIS OFFICE, was the occasion of conferring the supernatural gifts which had been promised in Old Testament prophecy. The evidence of His inauguration was furnished by the Baptist, the voice crying in the wilderness — that is, the voice of the law and the prophets — and by the visible descent of the Holy Spirit. The Baptist had a divine revelation that the Messiah should be pointed out to him by the visible descent of the Holy Spirit resting and abiding upon Him (Joh 1.33). If he supposed that the Messiah should appear after the stern and vehement manner in which the Old Testament prophets presented themselves, he was to learn that God had chosen another way. The Messiah came among others to be baptized, and when He was baptized, the Spirit, like a dove, the emblem of gentleness, purity, and loves descended upon Him from the open heaven, and rested or abode upon Him.

This descent of the Spirit was intended to confirm and encourage the Lord Jesus before entering on His arduous work; and it took place in that public concourse of people which assembled to hear the Baptist, and became the occasion of His public introduction into office. On this august occasion all the Persons of the Trinity were distinctly manifested — the Father revealing Himself by an audible voice, the Son appearing in the flesh which He assumed, the Holy Spirit descending in a bodily shape like a dove. The anointer was the Father, the anointed was the Son, the unction, or anointing oil (Psa 45.7), was the Holy Ghost, a divine Person of equal rank. It was not beneath the dignity of the Holy Spirit at the inauguration of the Messiah — whose office implies the reception of the Spirit not by measure (Joh 3.34), and

128

the dignity of receiving authority to dispense that Spirit to others — to make use of that visible emblem to accredit the great fact, and to bear testimony to it. Enough for us that it occurred. We are not warranted in the case of every Biblical narrative to demand an answer to the question, Why was this? The abiding of the dove on Jesus, or the appearance of a dove, indicated that the Spirit of the Lord now RESTED upon Him (Isa 11.2). To the same purpose Peter said: “God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power” (Act 10.38).

Thus the unction for the office of MESSIAH or CHRIST is seen in the sinless nature and endowments of every kind that qualified Him for His task (Isa 42.1-4, 49.1, 2). The full supply of the Spirit with which the Son was replenished from His nativity, was shadowed forth by many anointings instituted in the typical services of Israel, especially in the appointments to the three principal functions — prophet, priest, and king (Isa 61.1; Psa 45.8). There was, in the Lord’s human life, a combination of all the graces that seem the most opposite — meekness and boldness, the assertion of truth and deep humility, greatness and gentleness — nay, the scattered beauties of all the saints jointly found in Him. The expression: “the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus,” unfolds to us the source of all His actions, and demonstrates that more habitual grace dwelt in Him than in all created beings. The Baptist therefore declared: “God giveth not the Spirit by measure to Him” (Joh 3.34); for though the words “to Him” are not in the original Greek, they are undoubtedly implied, as will appear from the following reasons: (1) the passage cannot be generalized into an allusion that shall take in the Church. It is a very forced interpretation that would refer it to the general outpouring of the Spirit on the Church — a comment for which the context supplies no warrant. Moreover, (2) the expression GIVETH THE SPIRIT, in the present tense, is there used in connection with the fact, and is the reason of the fact, that Jesus “speaketh the words of God,” but is not in connection with the authority subsequently conferred of giving the Spirit to others.

129

If it is asked: What need had He of the divine teaching of the Holy Spirit when He had known the heavenly Father from eternity? The answer is: The Son of God, as such, needed no further teaching as to divine things. But as it behoved Him to be man, to be made like to His brethren, and to occupy the servant’s place as the one Mediator between God and man, He NEEDED THAT UNCTION with which He was supplied. The Socinians, who will have it that whatever higher knowledge of divine things was in Jesus was obtained at His baptism, put the two statements in antagonism to each other. But they are in perfect harmony.

That unction with the Spirit which preceded Christ’s miraculous activity when He began to go about doing good, was bestowed on the occasion when He came to receive baptism, and to be publicly inaugurated into His Messianic office.

The Spirit descended upon Him and abode on Him in such fulness that He could communicate His miraculous power to His friends, which no mere prophet could ever perform (Joh 1.33; Mat 3.11). He was anointed to be the supreme Prophet (Mat 16.20); and as the prophets had immediate revelations when the Spirit of God came upon them, the same thing held true of Him, but with this marked peculiarity, that the Spirit did not occasionally reveal the will of, God as in their case, but evermore permanently dwelt in Him to reveal the divine mind, and make Him conscious of His own Sonship.

The visible descent of the Holy Spirit, not only for the sake of the Jews and of the Baptist, but for a testimony to Christ Himself (Mat 3.16), took place while Jesus was praying to the Father, probably with a view to obtain the Spirit, which had long before been promised by the prophets. (Luk 3.21).

130

As to the object designed to be served by the descent of the Holy Spirit, it showed that Jesus of Nazareth was the Messiah promised to the Fathers, and that He was filled with the Spirit, which, on the one hand, would fit Him for the execution of *His high office*; and, on the other hand, *enable Him, when His work was accomplished, to dispense the Spirit* to His people without let or hindrance; for the Spirit is the efficient cause of all His divine operations outward to the Church and to the world. The operations of the Son of God upon His human nature were effected by the Holy Spirit, as the immediate efficient cause of its existence, and of its fitness for the accomplishment of the great work for which the Son of God had assumed human nature.

The Spirit given at the baptism was intended to equip Him for the execution of His mediatorial office, as Prophet, Priest, and King. That the Spirit qualified Him for His prophetic priestly and kingly offices is evident, because, with a full consciousness of His divine Sonship perpetually awakened and sustained by the Holy Spirit, He (1) not only spoke the words of God, but (2) offered Himself without spot to God, and (3) draws all His people to Himself by the constant aid of the eternal Spirit.

Is it strange that He should be under the guidance of the Spirit which He gives to others? This will not appear strange when we call to mind that He was man, and that His human nature without a separate personality of its own had its activity only in personal union with the Son of God, who, though neither depotentiated, nor holding any of His divine perfections in abeyance, *acted on the human nature*, in every mediatorial act, *by the power of the Holy Spirit*. The divine nature did not absorb the human nature in any of its functions. Both natures were perfectly distinct, but united in the one Person. The light of Christ's understanding, the holy purity and the unswerving obedience of His will, the exercise of all His faculties and powers in religious things, were due to the immediate guidance of the Holy Spirit of God, giving Him the full consciousness that He was the eternal Son, and authority to act as such.

131

The next fact in Christ's life was THE TEMPTATION, of which it is said that He was *led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted* (Mat 4.1). The human nature was confirmed by the Spirit, and made victorious at every point of assault by the sustaining power of the Holy Spirit.

And when the temptation was ended, it is said: "Jesus returned *in the power of the Spirit* into Galilee" (Luk 4.14), to begin a ministry of power. Coming from the scenes of the temptation with a victory which gave Him the right of conquest, He, with an absolute plenitude of the Spirit, began to call disciples to Him, partly as trophies of His victory, partly as office-bearers in the kingdom which He was warranted to erect on the ruins of Satan's kingdom, which had already sustained a reverse. Every converted soul was a new prey taken from the adversary by the HOLY SPIRIT, on the ground of the meritorious obedience, which was accepted as perfect, at the point where the battle was lost by the first man. Jesus had authority to take the first steps for setting up His kingdom.

Another memorable fact was the sermon preached in the synagogue of Nazareth, where He was well known (Luk 4.17). Having read the words of the prophet Isaiah, which are expressly put into the mouth of the Messiah — "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because He hath anointed me to preach" (Isa 61.1) — He expounded it, and added: "This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears." The doctrines which He uttered exhibited the unction to which the prophecy referred, and His townsmen wondered at the *gracious words* (τοῖς λόγοις τῆς χάριτος) which proceeded out of His mouth, as He spoke by the Spirit which anointed Him.

The next fact which discovers that He acted by the Spirit, was the CASTING OUT OF SATAN. "If I cast out devils BY THE SPIRIT OF GOD, then the kingdom of God is come to you"

132

(Mat 12.28). The Lord Jesus was then face to face with Satan's kingdom, and was setting up the kingdom of God. This was not the general dominion over the world. It was that kingdom referred to in the first promise, where it was said that the seed of the woman should bruise the serpent's head. By the Spirit of God which rested on Him, He was able to work miracles in general, and to cast out Satan in particular from his fortress in the human heart; thus showing an authority and a miraculous power which sufficiently attested that the King of a new kingdom was on the scene, and had begun His sway over those who are born of the Spirit. The Holy Spirit was for a time shut up and limited to Christ's own Person. But when the atonement was consummated, the life-principle of His own Person was also to be that of His kingdom.

I next refer to the Spirit's work in connection with Christ's priestly oblation: "*Who, through the eternal Spirit, offered Himself without spot to God*" (Heb 9.14). The expression: "the eternal Spirit," can only mean the Holy Spirit according to the usual acceptance of the term — not the divine nature of Christ, as too many expositors have understood it. The meaning is, that the Son of God, moved and animated by the Holy Ghost, offered Himself without spot as an atoning sacrifice. The Spirit rendered Him an unspotted sacrifice. The Spirit discovered to Him the inflexible claims of God as well as inflamed Him with such love to man and zeal for God as prompted Him to go forward in spite of every hindrance, pain, and difficulty, to effect the world's redemption, and thus fitted Him as man for His work. The Holy Spirit, in a word, filled His mind with the unflagging ardour, zeal, and love which led Him to complete the sacrifice.

To explain the text as if it described the divine nature as priest and the human nature as the sacrifice, is inadmissible. The WHOLE PERSON is priest and victim; for all done by either nature belongs to the Person: HE offered HIMSELF, says the apostle.

133

In this view of the matter, it would be a mere tautology — if the eternal Spirit is interpreted of the divine nature — to say He offered Himself through the divine nature. It would on that principle be but a repetition of the same thing. If we take it, however, as intimating the action of the Holy Spirit, it will vividly represent the holy fire by which the sacrifices were consumed. One does not find, except on this interpretation, anything in the sacrifice of Christ that could be adduced as the antitype of the holy fire employed in the sacrifice. Nor are the objections to the view which we have propounded of any weight. When it is objected that the Holy Spirit was not the Priest who offered the sacrifice, the obvious answer is that Christ as Priest offered Himself a sacrifice possessed of infinite value and excellence in consideration of His divine Person, and of the additional fact that it was unspotted and offered through the Holy Spirit. Because the Spirit was in Him as a Spirit of faith and zeal and love — the Redeemer took upon Him with the utmost alacrity all that was to be performed and endured for man's redemption.

The Holy Spirit, which framed the Redeemer's mind as well as body, perpetually rested upon Him during all His earthly sojourn, imparting to Him the full consciousness of His Sonship in the highest sense, and prompting Him to execute the mediatorial work imposed on Him (Isa 42.1-4). That our Saviour was also raised from the dead by the Holy Ghost, is clearly taught by Peter, when he affirms that He was put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit (1Pet 3.18).

III. The THIRD DEGREE of Christ's unction, reserved for His exaltation, is thus described: "Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and *having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost*, He hath shed forth this which ye now see and hear" (Act 2.33).

134

This third degree of unction to which reference is made in the Psalms (Psa 2.6, 45.7), and which became apparent at Pentecost, was an ascension-gift, the description of which by Peter is but a paraphrase of the words: "Thou hast ascended on high; Thou hast led captivity captive; Thou

hast received gifts for men” (Psa 68.18). That supply of the Spirit was meant for the Church to be erected and organized; and it was fitly bestowed after the ascension on those for whom the Spirit was purchased as well as destined.

When we follow the sequence of events on the day of Pentecost, we see the Spirit acting in a twofold way — as the Spirit of conviction and as the Spirit of adoption. He *convinced* the multitude *of their sin* and guilt, that they might seek repentance and forgiveness. To minds penitent and receiving baptism for the remission of sins, He was further promised as the Spirit of adoption: “Ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost” (Act 2.38). The order of salvation is repentance, forgiveness, and then the inhabitation of the Holy Ghost as the Spirit of adoption.

We are brought to the ACTUAL MISSION of the Comforter. Previous to His resurrection Christ had been the receiver of the Spirit, and the Spirit was mainly limited to Christ’s own Person. With His resurrection the day came when He showed that the great result of His atoning death was the power of bestowing the Spirit upon others, a blessing so momentous that it may be described as that in which all other blessings are included. This is the grandest display of Christ’s exaltation — the culminating point — arguing at once reward and divine dignity. For no mere servant could occupy the position of conferring upon others the gift of the Spirit, who is a divine Person. He only who had put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself, and who had the Spirit to bestow, could exercise the authority of sending Him. The Spirit was given by the risen Christ to equip His ministers and to be the all-directing as well as sanctifying power in the kingdom of heaven which was now set up, as had been expressly promised by the Old Testament prophets and by the Lord Himself (ps. 68.19; John 14.16).

135

As Mediator, the Lord Jesus was anointed with the Holy Spirit for the execution of all His offices and for the performance of all His work. The RIGHT TO SEND THE SPIRIT into the hearts of fallen men was acquired by atonement. Many, indeed, had been saved in virtue of His covenant engagement from the day of the first promise. The operations of the Spirit in every epoch presuppose the vicarious sacrifice, on which depends the right of giving the Holy Spirit in any case: “He redeemed us that (*ἵνα*) we might receive the promise of the Spirit by faith” (Gal 3.14). The promised Spirit followed the cancelling of the curse as the effect the cause. Countless multitudes had been saved on the ground of the coming sacrifice, but the precision of the language which connects the gift of the Spirit with the finished work of Christ is never forgotten, and the Holy Spirit was never spoken of as SENT while the old economy stood.

The Holy Ghost, supplying His humanity with light and strength for His mediatorial work, was, according to the divine order, only carrying out the will of the Son, and interposing His power to execute the intimations of the Son. The Spirit’s operations revealed the will and purpose of the Son.

The WORKING OF MIRACLES was also from the Holy Spirit, though the authority flowed from Christ Himself. The Holy Spirit is described as acting in Christ’s prophetic office in the same way as in the apostles and prophets. He performed miracles: He showed that the kingdom of God was come. The distinction which Peter employs when he uses the expression: “anointed with the Holy Ghost and with power,” may refer to both gifts — to the sanctifying as well as to the miraculous works (Act 10.38).

136

From the statements referring to Christ’s unction for all His offices, it sometimes appears as if He were in the sub-ordinate position of needing direction, aid, and miraculous power for the purposes of His mission; at other times He is said to GIVE THE SPIRIT and to SEND THE SPIRIT, as if the Spirit’s operations were subordinated to the Son. It is, however, evident from

the whole tenor of Scripture that there was a conjoined mission in which the Son and Spirit acted together for man's restoration, according to the order of operation in the Trinity.

137

LECTURE III. THE WORK OF THE SPIRIT IN THE INSPIRATION OF PROPHETS AND APOSTLES.

IN the Old and New Testament we find two kinds of gifts, dividing the community into two classes. We find (1) the ordinary saving gifts in the religious body, or people of God: (2) the extraordinary gifts for official service. The latter created duties rather than dignities; and the authority conferred on their possessors was only a further obligation. They were the necessary endowments for qualifying office-bearers called to administer the covenant, and in whom God spoke (Heb 1.1).

It may be proper to show that they were gifts intended to fit men for office; that they were but temporary; and that they were conspicuously displayed, now here and now there.

Extraordinary gifts were given from the earliest times to the recipients of the divine oracles, first to Moses, through whom the law was given, and then to the cycle of prophets who spoke the word of God to their own generation, or wrote it, by divine command, for all coming times. These gifts were intended to show men generally, that in receiving their word as a divine message, they were not misled by cunningly devised fables. The Spirit is referred to as the author of these supernatural gifts (Heb 2.4); and they ceased when no longer needed for the great end which they were intended to subserve.

138

1. As to prophecy, it was not, as some will have it, mere religious enthusiasm, or the exaltation of the religious sentiment. Though Abraham is called a prophet (Gen 20.7), and all by whom the Spirit uttered a divine communication, we find it was specially from the time of Samuel that a series of PROPHETS, with a commission supernaturally accredited, appeared in succession, down to the time of Malachi, to recall Israel to their law — to reprove the nation's vices, to declare the divine judgments — and to proclaim the greatest events in the world's history — the incarnation, atonement, and gracious reign of the Messiah. This gift of prophecy was the chief gift of Old Testament times; and an act of divine immediate intervention conveyed that gift to those who were invested with it.

The Holy Spirit is referred to as THE SPIRIT OF PROPHECY in that very variously expounded passage of the Apocalypse: ἡ γὰρ μαρτυρία Ἰησοῦ ἐστὶν τὸ πνεῦμα τῆς προφητείας — “the testimony of Jesus is the Spirit of prophecy” (Rev 19.10); the meaning of which appears not so much in the order of the words given in the Authorized Version, as in their transposition, which the Greek warrants and the sense demands, thus: “the Spirit of prophecy is the testimony of Jesus.”¹ The expression: “the Spirit of prophecy,” according to the uniform usage where a genitive follows the term Spirit, intimates that the Spirit spoke in all the prophets; and the import of the clause is, that the scope or aim of all prophecy was to testify of Jesus (Joh 15.26, 5.39).

The nature of the Spirit's operation on the prophet's mind is explained by Peter when he thus declares, in full harmony with all that the historic outline of the Old Testament narrative contains: “No prophecy of the Scripture was of any private excitation (ἐπιδύσεως); but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost” (2Pet 1.21).

139

¹ See to this effect a dissertation by Stade, published under the auspices of Mosheim, *de Spiritu Prophetiae de Christo testante*, 1734. The purport of the verse is thus put: “ita ego quoque jussus sum testem Christi agere.”

The antithesis intended to be conveyed by the two clauses is, no private impulse, but a moving influence of the Spirit. The allusion of the words, though variously interpreted, seems to be to the mission of the prophets, to the removal of the barriers or the opening of the lists when they started on their race; for they ran only when the Spirit sent them (Jer 23.21). They remained silent till they received the Spirit's communication, or the unmistakable impulse of the Spirit (Jer 20.17); in other words, they did not start till the lists were opened, and they were told to run. The Spirit did not give them this gift as a permanent habit, or so much reserved wealth from which they could draw at their discretion. He gave them light and divine communications for the official purpose which all inspiration subserved at certain times, and so moved them that they could not but speak: or write what the Spirit enjoined them to declare. The prophetic Spirit imparted a supernatural illumination in virtue of which they understood fully what they were commissioned to announce — whether things past, present, or to come — beyond the range of the unaided human faculties. As to the mode of communication to the human mind, whether given by dream, vision, or ecstasy, we should not attempt to scrutinize it, partly because we have had no experience of the thing, partly because our faculties are not commensurate to the task.

2. The supernatural gifts in the New Testament Church were very abundant, but all culminated in THE APOSTLES, who were the organs of Christ's revelation to the Church, and invested with an ecumenical commission which extended to all lands, and which endures through all time. The Church is built on the apostles, and will continue to stand on that foundation till the second advent. As to those supernatural gifts which the Spirit thus dispensed in the apostolic Churches in the most ample fulness, according to His will, even beyond the circle of the apostles, we find that to one He gave the gift of knowledge,

140

to another the gift of healing, to another the working of miracles, to another prophecy, and the like. These gifts were limited to individuals, and not universal; they were temporary, so that one might possess them today and want them tomorrow; and they were by no means co-extensive with the possession of divine grace. That rich supply of supernatural or miraculous gifts with which the apostolic Churches were adorned, was a standing pledge and sign that the inward miracle of inspiration continued. The cessation of these gifts, after they had served their purpose, was a significant fact. But during the whole time of their continuance, these miraculous gifts, and especially the gift of tongues — that is, the gift of speaking in languages which had never been learned — were a conclusive proof and illustration of the miracle of inspiration.

These extraordinary gifts of the Spirit were no longer needed when the canon of Scripture was closed. Up to that time they were an absolute necessity. They are now no longer so. Nor is the Church warranted to expect their restoration, or to desire prophetic visions, immediate revelations, or miraculous gifts, either in public or in private, beyond, or besides, the all-perfect canon of Scripture. The Church of Rome, which still claims these extraordinary gifts, is to that extent injurious to the Spirit as the author of Scripture. And enthusiastic sects¹ that cherish the belief of their restoration, or an expectation to that effect, have not learned or dull pondered how great a work of the Spirit has been completed and provided for the Church of all times in the gift of the Holy Scriptures.

When they began to be abused for purposes of display on the one side, or envy on the other, they were put in a secondary place; and a more excellent way presented to men's attention. Then the saving graces — faith, hope, love —

141

¹ *E.g.* The Montanists of the second century and the Irvingites of the nineteenth century.

were so preferred as to eclipse the most imposing extraordinary gifts (1Cor 12.31 ff.). The inestimable blessings of regenerating grace, and of true spiritual life, were set forth as of paramount value far beyond all the transitory gifts.

The presence of miraculous gifts in both dispensations served a twofold purpose. They were (1) an indubitable proof of a supernatural revelation from God to man in general (Heb 2.4); (2) they were a reliable pledge as well as elucidation of the inward miracle of inspiration. The man who possessed them, that is, who was invested with what was in its own nature miraculous, and who gave evidence that he could at proper seasons reveal the future, was entitled with authority to say: "Thus saith the Lord."

When it is alleged that the restoration of these gifts is not an unwarrantable expectation, the answer is, they are no longer required. The closing of the canon has superseded their necessity and value, inasmuch as the Church possesses in the Scriptures all that they were intended to accredit and commend. Beyond the written word which was completed before the apostles passed away, the Spirit has no further revelations or immediate communications of the divine will to impart. The extraordinary gifts, limited as they were to the primitive Church, wholly passed away, because they were no longer necessary.

When it is argued that they have been lost by the Church's fault, and that they would be restored to the believing expectation of the Church — if she had faith to wait for them in prayer — the answer is, that the prophecy of Joel was fulfilled at Pentecost and during the apostolic age. To the allegation that these gifts ought still to be possessed, we reply by denying the supposition that the miraculous gifts were to continue. What would they accredit if the canon is closed? Had they been intended as a part of the Church's chartered rights, they would not have been withheld for nearly two thousand years. The link with a miraculous past would have been kept up. But they had served their purpose.

142

The proposition which I shall here endeavour to set forth and vindicate is the following:

The Holy Spirit supplied prophets and apostles, as chosen organs, with gifts which must be distinguished from ordinary grace, to give forth in human forms of speech, a revelation which must be accepted as the Word of God in its whole contents, and as the authoritative guide for doctrine and duty.

This proposition I will now assert and elucidate. But let me at the outset obviate a difficulty as to the order in which we take up the question. It has been objected by certain writers that we reason in a circle here, first proving the truth of Scripture by its unerring inspiration, and then establishing inspiration by Scripture. It is not so. We proceed by a strictly inductive method. In the whole argument, which goes to establish the fact of a divine revelation as well as the genuineness, authenticity, and canonical authority of Scripture, nothing is assumed. We neither forestall historic proof nor dispense with rational evidence. All this is completed before the question of inspiration is even taken into consideration. It is only when these points have been conclusively proved and established that we interrogate the books committed to the Church as the oracles of God on the question of their higher origin. The evidence from MIRACLES and PROPHECY, which accredits a divine commission, accredits also the inspiration to which the apostles laid claim.

As to the credentials supplied by MIRACLES, wrought as they were by the same Spirit who is the Spirit of revelation and the Spirit of prophecy, it must be held that the miracles performed by Moses, by the prophets, and by the apostles, furnish undeniable evidence that they spoke and wrote by divine inspiration. It is a first principle to which no valid exception can be taken, that the Holy Spirit, the divine author of all miracles, will by no means give countenance to an impostor, or give a divine sanction to falsehood.

143

The Deists and sceptics generally are so well aware of this, that they have left no means untried to invalidate this proof. As it would carry us away from our subject to enter into this topic at large, I shall only touch its salient point. Whether miracles prove a commission to reveal a divine message and the truth of the doctrine IMMEDIATELY or MEDIATELY, has been debated with much acuteness. I unhesitatingly attach myself to the view which asserts that miracles immediately prove the truth of the doctrine and the inspiration of the messenger.

If, therefore, anyone declared, as Moses and the prophets did in the Old Testament, and as Christ and His apostles in the New Testament, that he was divinely commissioned and performed miracles in attestation of his doctrine, the acceptance of their testimony with unhesitating confidence was only a compliance with divine authority. They were organs of a heaven-attested revelation, speaking and writing with divine inspiration; for God evidently spoke in them (Heb 1.1). They who attempt, as many now attempt in a more open or more modified way, to expel the miracles from Scripture, are virtually endeavouring — whether they consciously mean it or not — to make the writers false witnesses, and to undermine all certainty.

Another test of not less validity than the former is the evidence derived from PROPHECY, which is A MIRACLE OF KNOWLEDGE as the other is of power. The great test of a true prophet was that the prediction came to pass (Deu 18.22). As this test, however, could not be applied by his contemporaries, if the matter were remote, we find that those credentials which established him as a prophet of the Lord were based on the fulfilment of things which could be known by experience. In proof of this we have only to recall the predictions of Moses, Samuel, Elijah, and Elisha in reference to things near at hand, and verified before the eyes of their contemporaries. We have only to recall such

144

near predictions as Micaiah's (1Kings 22.28) or Isaiah's (Isa 7.4, 37.34); and when they were summoned to write, so vividly had all been presented to their minds, and so accurately had all been retained in their memory, that we find a Jeremiah, at the end of twenty years, making the selection of the matter and digesting it into form by the Spirit's guidance in a manner succinct enough to prevent the book from exceeding reasonable bounds, and we must clearly hold that thoughts and words were, as it were, fused and molten together or formed and shaped together (Jer 36.32).

As for the apostles in the New Testament, it is only necessary to recall their opportunities and the terms of their commission, to see that they were armed with historic information obtained in the Lord's immediate presence, and subsequently brought back, as occasion required, to their remembrance by the Holy Spirit, who also furnished the communication of new truths, which were supernaturally imparted as the necessities of the Church required. Their authority, accordingly, was the same with that of Christ, because He took all the responsibility of their official teaching upon Himself, when He said: "He that heareth you heareth me" (Mat 10. 40).

It is important to keep in mind, that while the Holy Spirit is the author of supernatural revelation with all its accompaniments, adjuncts, and evidences, there are two aspects of the question — one IN FACT and one IN WORD. The former is the objective manifestation of the Son of God; the latter is the written word prepared by men whom the Spirit specially called and endowed. THE PERSONAL SELF-MANIFESTATION preceded; the WRITTEN WORD followed. The former conveyed the revelation to the minds of prophets and apostles; the latter conveyed it in appropriate terms from their minds to the Church at large, securing for it such a safe communication as became the oracles of God.¹

¹ See *Studien und Kritiken* for 1861, H. 1.

145

Both operations were from the Holy Spirit. Revelation always existed IN GREAT FACTS, with an appended explanation in spoken or written words. In these facts we find the various attributes of God and the aspects of His moral government exhibited to the faith of the Church and for the enlargement of her knowledge. And THE REVELATION OF WORD showed how the facts answered this purpose. Revelation of fact and revelation of word, emanating from one and the same Spirit of God, were conjoined from the beginning. From the time of the fall, the types and prophecies — foreshadowing and predicting the great sacrifice — opened up a revelation of fact in due time to be accomplished, of which also a thousand deliverances in the history of the Church were the pledges. To this revelation of fact the patriarchs looked forward, just as we look back to the accomplished reality. In the New Testament the revelation is embodied in the historic facts of the incarnation, atonement, and resurrection of Christ, and in the perfect narrative or record of these facts in the written word.

Of this written revelation the Holy Spirit is the author. The fact that the personal Spirit not only conveyed the truth to the writer's mind, but found adequate expression for it, involved a certain limitation or abasement in condescending to speak in human forms of speech. We may not unfitly say that, as God is said to humble Himself to behold the things that are in the earth (Psa 113.6), and as the Son humbled Himself when He became obedient to death (Phil 2.8), so the Holy Spirit abases Himself in giving His message, however lofty the matter, in a form of speech, which often resembles a mother's accommodation to the capacity of an infant. And this was necessary in order that the written word might, without constraint or difficulty, pass into the articulate speech and the written language of every nation on the surface of the globe.

146

I have referred to divine fact as underlying the inspired word, because the principal argument at present urged against inspiration — as is well known to those who know German theology — is, that the revelation is not in the documents or in the written word at all. It is argued that the latter are mere literary productions, composed under the same conditions with ordinary writings, or differing from them only in the circumstance that the writers were holier men; and hence they have no reserve or fear in permitting any liberty to be taken with the Scriptures. They fall back on the fact.

They say the revelation of fact is secure. This mediating theology, which took its rise from Schleiermacher, and has been represented on this point by Tholuck, Rothe, and the great body of German divines, allows a revelation in historic facts, but denies the Biblical revelation in any true acceptance of the term. In a word, the historic revelation of fact is isolated from the book Revelation. The books, according to them, are no more than any other narrative digested by pious men — mere literary productions having no supernatural origin whatever. The revelation, according to this theory, is not in the records at all, which, in fact, are correct and trustworthy just in proportion as the writers had access or had not to reliable information, and who are by no means supposed to be exempt from the infirmities, mistakes, and even moral obliquities into which men, acting from ordinary motives, are betrayed.

The Biblical revelation, if capable of proof at all, can be established only as a historically guaranteed fact. All other modes of proof which have been made use of have already been found unserviceable. Thus the arguments drawn from the necessity of inspiration are of no weight, because the *a priori* style of reasoning is carried into a sphere to which it cannot fitly be applied. Arguments of this sort, which can be set aside as nothing more than assumptions, are of little value. As nothing but divine testimony can assure us of a divine fact, we must, after being satisfied with the validity of the credentials, interrogate revelation itself.

147

The authority of the Old Testament, confirmed by a vast array of miracles and by the evidence of accomplished prophecy, was accepted not only by the Old Testament Church, but by our Lord and His apostles, and passed over into the Christian Church with divine sanction before the New Testament literature, properly so called, was prepared for the Church's use.

As to the New Testament books, to which we shall now more specially refer, we may affirm that it is only on the authority and credibility of a divine teacher — the Messiah Himself — that the proof of the theopneustic character of the New Testament Scriptures rests. The Lord Jesus said it, and His guarantee or promise secured its historic certainty. He promised to the apostles, that for the delivery of the communications made to them by His oral teaching or subsequent revelations, they should be supernaturally guided by the Holy Ghost the Comforter. We conclude, accordingly, that they were so guided. The cogency of this deduction needs no confirmation. The theopneustic character of the apostles' instruction, whether historical or doctrinal, whether oral or written, belongs to a class of extraordinary or miraculous operations of the Holy Spirit. They belong to the invisible miracle, and Luthardt well observes: "He who says revelation says miracle, and miracles cannot be explained."

From this it follows that we need make no attempt to prove the inspiration of apostles to a theological disputant who sees in Jesus only an ordinary human teacher, or one, like the old prophets, only under the general influence of the Holy Spirit. With such an opponent it is vain to debate on this subject; and this is the case with a considerable number of those who are opposed to supernatural or plenary inspiration. They recognise in Jesus only a man of like passions with ourselves, on whom the Deity wrought, and in whom the Deity dwelt, in a peculiar way, by providences and influences of an exceptional character, but not the only-begotten Son.

148

But, on the contrary, he who acknowledges the Lord Jesus as Messiah, and as the Only-begotten of the Father, cannot for a moment entertain a doubt as to the truth of any of His promises or declarations. Hence the only point of which it is possible to make a question is — Whether the promise of the Spirit's inspiration was actually made, and whether He promised it in the sense which we have put upon His words.

It is conceded that the proof of the promise as to the mission of the Comforter for imparting this theopneustic gift must be drawn from the recorded sayings of Christ in a few passages which we can analyse and examine (viz. Mat 10.19 and Luk 12.14; John 14.16, 15.26, 16.7, 14). These passages — spoken by our Lord in immediate view of the commission which the apostles were to discharge, first within the cities of Israel, and next on a far more extended scale — contain express assurances that they should receive the Holy Ghost, and be qualified by the Holy Ghost in the exercise of a specially conferred gift, to discharge the duties of their mission in propagating or spreading the gospel among the nations; that they should receive from the Spirit of God a mouth and wisdom for the purpose of directing them when summoned before governors and kings¹ HOW and WHAT they should speak on every occasion; that the Spirit should recall the words of Christ as they were originally spoken to their remembrance; that the Spirit should further instruct them on points which could not for the present be comprehended; and that the Comforter, as a peculiar teacher, should descend upon them, and equip them in such a way that they would be endued with power from on high.

An objection has been made, indeed, to the employment of those passages as a proof of the theopneustic character of their writings, on the allegation that *the men* might have the Spirit, but that the tenor of the promise does not in so many words extend to *their writings*,

149

¹ μή μεριμνήσητε πῶς ἢ τί λαλήσητε· (Mat x. 19).

which might be prepared like any other literary productions. The objection has been frequently repeated by one theological school after another. The passages, it is said, do not contain a word to prove that in the composition of their writings the apostles were favoured with any higher guidance of the Spirit. It is contended that the Lord merely names occasions when they might be summoned unprepared, or under embarrassing circumstances, to give an oral statement of their beliefs and Messianic convictions; and hence it is alleged that this animating promise of the immediate operation of His Spirit and of His special guidance in arduous times might not extend to their written statements. Nay, it is argued by way of challenge: How can it be warrantable to hold that the promise extended to a wholly different case, of which at the time when the words were uttered the apostles could have no anticipation?

The objection now stated might have some appearance of plausibility if that was the only passage, and if there were no other passages descriptive of the extraordinary gift of inspiration conferred on the apostles, except where the promise was in some sort limited. But that is not the case with the passages preserved to us by John, where Christ speaks with a certain indefinite generality. He promised that after His departure to the Father, they should enjoy the peculiar teaching and guidance of the Comforter, who should permanently abide with them, at once to teach them all things and lead them into all truth. We do not need to prove again, that by the Holy Ghost the Comforter we are to understand a divine instructor, helper, or patron who should not only qualify them for their commission, but impart a full insight into Christ's religion. He was to come as a divine Person to impart a permanent theopneustic gift, which was to be exercised in every department of apostolic activity. They were to be under the constant influence and higher guidance of the Spirit for all official duty. We are fully warranted to

150

conclude that if Christ promised the immediate guidance of the Comforter as often as they were called, in their capacity of apostles, to give instruction in the facts and doctrines of His religion, He unquestionably comprehended within the scope of that promise the case of giving religious instruction through the medium of written documents addressed to the various Churches of the apostolic age and to the Church of all succeeding times. And *the apostles, in prefixing their name and office to their various Epistles*, intimated this fact to them and to us. As the theopneustic gift was permanent, while they continued to discharge their functions, we must suppose them to have been as much under divine guidance in the composition of their writings as in their oral instruction. The validity of this inference cannot be denied or disputed.

The opponents of Biblical revelation, accordingly, have recourse to another mode of assault. Some expressly deny that in the passages to which we appeal anything is promised even remotely approaching to the theopneustic gift. This is the favourite modern theory. It is maintained that nothing more is meant than the ordinary influence of grace, and that our Lord and His apostles never thought of a special higher power, or of IMMEDIATE divine inspiration imparted by the Comforter the Holy Ghost. The recent exegesis holds that Christ promised no more than the common supply of divine grace and the ordinary concurrence of divine Providence; and that it is unwarrantable to explain the words of any extraordinary immediate assistance in the way of plenary inspiration, or in the exercise of a theopneustic gift. In reply to this, it may suffice to say that we have only to reflect on the circumstances and condition of the apostles at the time when the Lord uttered the words, to be convinced that, according to the usage and scope of language, it is unwarrantable to refer those memorable promises as to the Holy Spirit's operations on their minds either to ordinary grace, or to the enlargement of their minds in the natural leadings of Providence. The

151

Lord Jesus was preparing the disciples in these later promises for the approaching separation, when they should be left without the visible guidance and immediate direction they had heretofore enjoyed. They had up to that moment turned to Him in every difficulty, distrusting their own wisdom, and willing to be led. And as they would be troubled and paralyzed at His death, He promised another guide, the Comforter, who should be to them what He had been, and who was permanently to abide with them.

In the proposition laid down, it was affirmed that prophets and apostles were supplied by the Spirit with gifts which must be distinguished from ordinary grace. The modern doctrine maintains the opposite of this; and the advocates of the mediating theology agree in the denial of it. Dr. Rothe, who is usually represented as the author of a conclusive discussion on the subject, labours to make out that the inspiration of the Biblical writers is identical with the spiritual illumination imparted to every Christian. He limits the aid of the Spirit to the work of enlightening their minds to apprehend the objective revelation, but does not place it in the immediate production of a divine message, or of religious knowledge for officially guiding and directing others. But inspiration, whether found in the Old Testament prophets or the New Testament apostles, must be distinguished from common spiritual illumination, if we are not minded, in the indulgence of mere prepossessions and theories, to confound what Scripture has plainly separated. The modern identification of the two must be denied if we take into account either the distinction of natural and ordinary, and supernatural and extraordinary gifts, or the purpose for which the latter were expressly given. The object of the Spirit in conferring the purely personal illumination was to enable men involved in corruption and darkness to appropriate the offered grace of the gospel. The object of the Holy Spirit in conferring inspiration, on the other hand, was OFFICIAL, to qualify prophets and apostles to deliver a divine communication unmingled with foreign elements. It is only necessary to appeal, in proof of this, to the terms of the commission with which they were invested.

152

As to the Old Testament prophets, their commission, as well as their official messages, are sufficiently apparent from the preface commonly prefixed to their communications: "Thus saith the Lord." And we cannot examine their lofty, and frequently awful, announcements without perceiving that they had received their intimations as to the future in so many words. Often they did not themselves comprehend them, and had to inquire and search what the Spirit, which was in them, did signify (1Pet 1.11). And they were held bound, under the penalty of death, to fulfil to the letter what the Spirit enjoined, as appears from the sad end of the unnamed prophet, who had been sent to cry against the altar in Bethel (1Kng 13.21 ff.).

In their oral communications to the people, to kings and princes, they seem to have had a copious flow of discourse, or a brief and condensed message according to the peculiarity of the times and occasions.

When we inquire whether divine action was suspended or withdrawn from the apostles in the execution of their office, we find — (1) that the promises given to them went far beyond the idea of their being left to the exercise of their own wisdom; (2) that miracles and supernatural gifts in all their rich variety abode with them to the end of their career. And these miraculous gifts were signs and pledges of the unseen miracle of plenary inspiration upon their minds. The following considerations will suffice to prove that the theopneustic gift is not to be reduced to the level of ordinary grace:

1. The theory which merges the distinction between ordinary and extraordinary gifts of the Spirit, loses sight of the divine sovereignty which the entire Scripture presupposes as to God's speaking by chosen organs to His Church (Heb 1.1).

153

All believers, it is true, receive in the same way the renewing of the Holy Ghost and the salvation of the gospel. But it was not so with the communication of the supernatural gifts. Let me illustrate this by an example. When Peter said to the impotent man: "In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, rise up and walk," we trace the clearest evidence of a divine communication (Act 3.6); or when he said: "Æneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed" (9.34), we see such an intimation conveyed by the Spirit to the apostle's mind, that he was left in no doubt as to the issue. He fully believed and expected that the words, which were divinely inspired and prophetic, would no sooner be uttered than they would be accompanied with the miraculous result which followed. There we see the invisible inspiration and the visible sign, the latter the pledge of the former. We can trace the existence of a divine communication or invisible miracle on Peter's mind, as well as the visible miracle in the immediate cure — a miracle of knowledge and a miracle of power conjoined, a prophecy and an accomplishment united. Without adducing other instances of the same thing scattered over the whole page of revelation, let it suffice to say that in all such miracles the theopneustic gift was announced and attested by the supernatural fact. The cessation of those miraculous gifts at the close of the apostolic age — when they had served the important function to which we have referred in the infancy of the Church — was a noteworthy and significant fact. But, during the whole period of their continuance, they were a sign and pledge, as well as an explanation, of the presence and reality of the theopneustic gift. The theory which identifies the composition of Scripture with the exercise of ordinary grace, is burdened with insuperable difficulties. The design of referring all to a general law, is to make the matter more acceptable to the understanding. It is not by general rationalistic reasonings, however, that historic facts are to be determined; and this point must be decided as a matter of fact.

154

The conclusion to which we come, therefore, is, that the gift of inspiration *differs in kind*, and not merely in measure, from the operation of ordinary grace. We have ample evidence to prove that the apostles, as the organs of Christ's revelation to the Church, were the subjects of a supernatural intervention absolutely unique, and essentially distinct in kind, from the general experience of Christian disciples. The gift of plenary inspiration was limited to individuals selected by divine sovereignty, and temporary in duration. It terminated with the closing of the canon, that is, when the revelation was completed. The other is common to all true Christians.

2. It must be further remarked, that the theory which makes inspiration identical with ordinary grace, fails to account for THE AUTHORITY which Scripture uniformly claims and asserts for itself as the word of God, and which the Church, Jewish and Christian, has always with one consent ascribed to it. If the prophets of the Old Testament, or the apostles in the New Testament, had nothing of direct and divine communication essentially distinguishing their words and writings from those of ordinary disciples, it is not possible to give any explanation of, the divine authority always ascribed to their announcements as distinct from those of ordinary men. The declaration on the part of the prophets when they said: "Thus saith the Lord," or on the part of apostles when they introduced their Epistles with the words: "Paul, an apostle," "Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ," not only implies that they derived their commission from above, but intimates: "He that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given to us His Holy Spirit" (1Thes 4.8).

155

3. And what would necessarily follow if, according to the current German theory, inspiration were identical with ordinary illumination? A simple *reductio ad absurdum* will here suffice. If the difference between the two was merely in degree, and not in kind, the theopneustic gift must be regarded as universal and coincident with true discipleship. But everyone perceives that this is not the case. More than that, revelation on such a supposition would have no finality, but be

an ever increasing quantity, with new developments without limit. Nor do we see how, on the theory which we impugn, extravagant or enthusiastic developments could be either reduced to a standard or stopped. If Scripture were not viewed as a completed revelation, with an absolute finality, we should be compelled to canvass in every age the claims of such growths as Montanism, or Irvingism, or modern Romanism, whose ecclesiastical organs, as is proved by the Vatican decrees, lay claim to a self-developing advance in doctrine, which asserts itself as equivalent to a sort of inspiration. By the finality of apostolic doctrine, we can nip all this in the bud. We conclude, therefore, that it is a vain attempt to identify illumination common to all believers, with inspiration peculiar to prophets and apostles. The latter are said to speak with the same authority as Christ Himself (Luk 10.16), which they could do only on the ground of official commission, not on the ground of personal illumination.

I said, moreover, in the proposition laid down, that supernatural revelation was given *in human forms of speech*. This is one significant proof of the divine condescension of the Holy Spirit, that instead of speaking in an elevated style of diction, and in the communication only of ideas above the capacity or range of the bulk of mankind, or merely for cultured and philosophic minds, He speaks from one mind to another in easy, clear, and perspicuous language, level to the apprehension of all tribes and nations. This is the glory of the Spirit's work of revelation, however profound the things themselves may be to which the revelation refers.

156

It is not necessary to define the MODE OF INSPIRATION, but only to assert the divine fact. We take the historic fact; but we decline every attempt to explain the inscrutable mode. That the theopneustic gift was imparted, is evident from the explicit statement that all Scripture is God-inspired (2Tim 3.16), and that holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost (2Pet 1.21). But no finite mind can venture, without presumption, to say how the human faculties concurred and acted with the Spirit's activity in the expression of a divine oracle. So various, in fact, was the mode of His divine communications, that it is impossible to frame a theory which either takes in all the facts or exhibits the manifold variety of ways in which the Almighty Spirit, who alone has the key to the human heart and to all its powers, was pleased to communicate His will. We repudiate all attempts to explain the mode in which revelation was conveyed to the human mind, or by inspired men to the mind of others. We conserve the miracle and the mystery. All such theories as the suggestion, elevation, and guidance or superintendence, propounded by Doddridge and others, only darken counsel by words without knowledge. With Dr. Chalmers we fully agree when he says: "The important question with us is not the process of the manufacture, but the qualities of the resulting commodity. The former we hold not to be a relevant, and we are not sure that it is a legitimate inquiry."¹ Our system is to have no system. We maintain the fact and leave the mode untouched, because beyond our ken. The French writers, such as Gaussen, M. d'Aubigne, Monod, Jalaquier, and Remond, write with more reserve and caution than any other class of theologians in modern times. Thus Gaussen, in the same spirit with Chalmers, said, when taken to task for his admirable book: "My theory," said he, "is to have no theory."

157

While repudiating the notion that the human element absorbed the divine, and the theory that every word was given by direct dictation, we hold that the only safe and judicious ground to occupy is to maintain the fact, and to regard the mode as inexplicable. The Scripture, with that reticence which is one of its marked peculiarities, gives no disclosure of the mode which the Holy Ghost adopted. And on this whole subject, enveloped as it is in mystery, we may affirm with confidence that the facts are so various as to be incapable of classification by any

¹ See his admirable chapter on Inspiration in his *Evidences*.

investigator; that the message came in the Old Testament in audible words, in dreams, in visions, in ecstasies or raptures, and in the New Testament by the Spirit's recalling the things spoken by Christ to memory, and by showing the apostles many things which they could not bear while Christ was with them. But our ignorance of the method not only disqualifies us from forming a consistent theory, but actually supplies a source of security and satisfaction.

The Scripture is the word of God, inspired throughout by the Spirit of God in every part, and given in human forms of expression. We must by no means maintain that the sacred writers were nothing but machines — nay, must be upon our guard against the attempt to define the undefinable. That a supernatural and miraculous operation prompted holy men to speak as they were moved by the Holy Ghost, and that the mental peculiarity of the writers was not suppressed by the theopneustic gift, as appears from their peculiar style and expression, must be accepted as the two sides of a great truth, which some have attempted to explain by immediate suggestion or dictation. But it is better not to attempt to explain the inexplicable. We define not the nature or mode of the miracle or divine intervention; for miracle it was; and Scripture omits all more particular definition beyond the fact that holy men were wrought upon and moved by the Holy Ghost (2Pet 1.21). And we accept its silences as well as its disclosures. When Scripture stops, we stop.

158

That there was infallible supernatural guidance, and that this extends to all the canonical books in the Old and New Testament, is undoubted. But how it acted it would be at once perilous and audacious to define, and a contented nescience is better than a presumptuous knowledge. The analogy between Christ's Person and the Scriptures has often been adduced, and truly serves as an illustration. The two-fold nature in the one Person of our Lord is there, and concurring to one result. But it is not possible to say where the one nature begins and the other ends in the production of the great redemption-work. His utterances and actions, divine yet human, were the utterances and actions of the God-man. I repeat, I retain the miracle and the mystery.

Another point laid down by us was, that *the theopneustic gift and Scripture are co-extensive*. The current theory of the day is the reverse of this. It asserts that a line is to be drawn between Scripture and the word of God; that God's word must be held to mean, not Scripture as we find it, but a certain spiritual kernel or religious substance which is to be extracted by a critical process; that, in a word, the Scripture is but the husk or shell in which the word of God is found, as the quartz is separated from the gold embedded in it.

Though many theologians of this century make this the foundation of their system, there is absolutely nothing to countenance or support it from Genesis to Revelation. And to establish the opposite, it is enough to adduce what Jesus said: "Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? If He called them gods, to whom *the word of God came*, and *the Scripture* cannot be broken," etc. (Joh 10.34). He represents the word of God and the Scripture as identical. But it is asked: Is not the theopneustic gift spoken of by the Apostle Paul in such a way as to give countenance to the idea that some directions such as those relating to conjugal duties were given without any supernatural guidance, as when he says: "I speak this by permission, and not by commandment" (1Cor 7.6)?

159

The true rendering is: "I speak this by indulgence, or allowance, to you, not by commandment" (κατὰ συγγνώμην, οὐ κατ' ἐπιταγήν). And in another passage, where he says: "I command, yet not I, but the Lord," the allusion is unmistakably to the Lord's own teaching, in the days of His flesh, revealing the Father's mind. When he says: "To the rest speak I, not the Lord," he communicates a further inspired announcement given to the apostle himself.

The theory advocated by that school, with a zeal worthy of a better cause, simply explodes the revelation of word, and appeals to the revelation of fact. It disjoins what cannot be disjoined. It declares, with an audacity approaching to bravado, that Christianity can dispense with any doctrine of inspiration. On the contrary, the plenary inspiration of the Scriptures may be called a question of existence for the Protestant Church, which is not supported by that reserve power of tradition and of authority which gives coherence and strength to the Romish system. It is obvious that the Protestant Church cannot forego the authority of Scripture, or, which amounts to the same thing, permit it to be regarded as the word of man, without inevitable defeat and ruin. The theological conflicts of the time may be said to hinge for the most part on the view which has been accepted on the doctrine of inspiration, or may be traced back to the opinions which have found currency on this point. In fact, we may affirm that no doctrine has assumed more varying aspects in the Protestant Church — every change of theological opinion finding its echo or making its vibrations felt in the question of inspiration, on which all other truths ultimately depend.

In conclusion, I will subjoin a brief allusion to some points of moment connected with this topic.

1. The testimony of the Holy Spirit to the Scriptures. This is an operation of the Spirit in the exercise of His applicatory grace, by and through the Scriptures themselves. Whatever enthusiasts may have held, no judicious divine ever asserted that the Spirit gives this internal criterion, or testifies without the word or apart from the word itself.

160

On the contrary, they always, in express terms, declared that we owe this testimony to the efficacy of the Spirit and word conjointly, not separately. They ascribed the effect to the Spirit not without the word, but by the word (not *extra aut citra verbum*). The testimony of Scripture about itself, and the efficacious testimony of the Spirit, concur to one result. The enthusiasts who have been wont to call the written word a dead letter, commonly speak of the Spirit as illuminating and regenerating the mind without the word; and Calvinistic divines have often had occasion to complain of a wrong done them by the Lutherans, in representing them as maintaining an immediate testimony of the Spirit. None of their best divines did so. They held that, as the sun is seen by his own light, Scripture is known by its own efficacy and the power of the Holy Spirit.

2. The reception of the Spirit's supernatural inspiration lays the foundation for ALL THE AUTHORITY of revelation. Revelation is accepted and obeyed not on the ground of its adaptation to my reason or conscience — though it is in harmony with both — but on the ground of its supernatural and theopneustic character. Its "Thus saith the Lord" carries with it the demand for prompt unquestioning submission. And though it accredits itself experimentally, it starts from a heavenly attestation which constrains consent. All true faith, in a word, is from authority, and rests primarily on the evidence of miracles and prophecy. It is this faith of authority that has given rise to all the achievements, devotional ardour, and martyr zeal of the Christian Church.

The other school, known as that of CHRISTIAN CONSCIOUSNESS, advocates the autonomy of the Christian mind and the Church's emancipation from the outward letter of the Scripture. It maintains bold and perilous positions. It maintains

161

- (1) that the New Testament is rather the expression of the Christian consciousness and of the Church's life than authoritative revelation; (2) that the Church is rather to be governed by the living progressive Spirit of the Church than by the letter of Scripture; (3) that evangelical doctrine receives new forms and phases from the Christian consciousness and the ever-developing influence of the Spirit.

Schleiermacher, to whom this school owes its origin, broke away from a faith of authority, and assumed the Christian consciousness or pious feeling as the source of knowledge and the matter of his science. He wished to secure for theology an independent territory against philosophy and the higher criticism. And, with a boldness amounting to bravado, the leaders of that school propound the most negative opinions. To affirm that the Christian consciousness is the source of spiritual knowledge is, in fact, a Quaker principle — defective and one-sided. It puts the Spirit within instead of the word without, the only full expression of the Spirit's mind. It furnishes but guesses at truth. The Christian consciousness is not the NORMA **NORMANS**, but NORMA NORMATA.

162

LECTURE IV. THE SPIRIT'S REGENERATING WORK ON THE INDIVIDUAL.

THE Spirit's work in the application of redemption to the individual will next engage our attention. And we must carry with, us the thought that the whole interposition of the Spirit of God rests on the ground of the Mediator's finished work. Obstacles stood in the way of the Spirit's return to the human heart of such a kind, that they were insurmountable by any finite resources. But they are put out of the way by Christ's vicarious sacrifice and royal priesthood — that is, by merit and efficacy, or purchase and power.

The efficacious operation of the Spirit presupposes God's sovereign love to individuals, or a personal election. Considered from the true point of view, the electing purpose of God implies that its efficacy has a special destination, and that it will reach its proper objects. They who interpret the divine word by the primary axiom that all men must share alike, and who impugn the absolute right of God to bestow salvation as men bestow their alms on whom He will by a purely free donation, forget, in their anxiety to be on a friendly footing with the Spirit of the age, that the advantage which their theory seems to gain by enlarging the extent of God's love is more than counterbalanced at another point by lack of efficacy. God's love finds out its objects. It is something far other than a mere benevolent but inefficacious desire in the divine mind which wishes, but does not potentially will, the salvation of men.

The presuppositions or postulates of the doctrine of the

163

Spirit, so far as man's necessities are concerned, are the following: — Their impotence for good takes for granted — *first*, their want of the Spirit and of all spiritual life; *secondly*, a subjection to the kingdom of sin and Satan; and *thirdly*, a voluntary aversion to God and rebellion against Him. This suggests a threefold corresponding inquiry: *first*, how is the forfeited presence of the Spirit restored to the human heart, and what effects accompany His return? *Secondly*, how are the effectually called translated from the family of Satan into the state of adopted sons? And *thirdly*, how is corrupted nature fully changed and made meet here and hereafter for the love and service of God? The first two points will be considered by us in the present lecture.

1. The forfeited presence of the Spirit is restored by Christ's mediatorship and obedience to God's law, in precept and penalty. They who fail to apprehend the atonement, or reduce it to an empty pageant or governmental expedient, in effect remove this mission of the Comforter from its dependence on the finished work of Christ as the basis or meritorious ground of the Spirit's return to the human heart. They connect the atonement not with the requirements of the divine nature and the inflexible law of God, but with a supposed public justice, which amounts only to a rectoral display or a deterring motive, but secures nothing. They forget, in the zealous advocacy of their universalism, that the Lord God is the only august public worthy of regard, and that there is no other to which the Most High will adapt His administration. But the question is not as to the extent of the atonement, which rests with the divine good pleasure, but as to its validity as a procuring cause or price, which many, in their anxiety to represent as meant for all, totally denude of its efficacy. They thus undermine the suretyship, substitution, and imputation on which the gift of the Spirit proceeds. They explode the deep federal oneness which lies at the foundation of the whole transaction, and secures the inalienable supply of the Spirit to all for whom the atonement was offered.

164

The nature of man's ruin, as implying the forfeiture of the Spirit, furnishes the *rationale* of the entire doctrine of the Spirit. Man is no longer a SPIRITUAL BEING, and they who speak in that way of his capacities and powers, and of the condition of human nature as it now is, introduce a

form of speech which has no true application to the subject. Viewed in his unfallen state, of which the renewed man has some faint conception, and of which the Spirit-filled humanity of Jesus was the true image, man might be described as a spiritual being. But with no propriety of language can the expression SPIRITUAL be applied to man in his fallen state. So far as the expression is intended to obviate the objection that the operations of the Spirit violate the integrity of man's moral nature, the language may be capable of some vindication, because it brings us back to the true idea of anthropology, and because original sin was never understood, except by Flacius, to have become the substance of the man. But the term "spiritual" has so precise a sense, and is so connected in our language with Biblical usage, that every other acceptation is to be avoided as liable to misconception.

If we delineate men's actual relation to God, they are described as having not the Spirit (Jude 19), and, as the necessary consequence of this, as sensual or natural (1Cor 2.14); in other words, so sunk into animal life that their wisdom is earthly (Jas 4.15), and they themselves without God (Eph 2.12).

God gave the Spirit to Adam, the earthly and spiritual elements of His constitution being so fully balanced that he was neither preponderantly animal nor absolutely pneumatic, but a living soul occupied in all his faculties by the indwelling Spirit. And had he continued steadfast,

165

or taken the true way, which corresponded with the idea of man, he would have passed in a straight course into the pneumatic or spiritual without tasting of death. But by his apostasy the Spirit departed, and he was left in possession of a mere natural or animal being, having not the Spirit (Jude 19). That the soul is deprived of the Spirit and of all divine light, and that he is not disposed to those objects which the law of God enjoins, is too evident to be questioned. Only conscience is left to act in him along with the dim outline of the moral law, of which the lingering remains may still be traced on every human heart. And it may be said of conscience, that its voice is heard more in accusing than in excusing. It is noteworthy that in the entire earthly life of Jesus there is no mention of conscience, for the obvious reason that He had the full image of God, and received the Spirit not by measure.

Thus detached from his primeval ties by the forfeiture of the Spirit, man follows the natural rather than the spiritual, the human rather than the divine. The religious sentiment gives way in all his course before the prevailing influence of the worldly mind. The wrong choice, which in fact is uniformly adopted, must be traced to a wrong bias; and till the nature is renewed by the restoration of the Spirit, no motive brought to bear on men's minds avails to turn them toward God. Acting from a bias which draws the mind away, they prefer the shadowy to the real, the speculative to the practical, the superficial and sensuous to those profoundly spiritual and humbling discoveries which are called forth by the divine word. On this point it is necessary to adjust the balance with the utmost delicacy to preserve the due equipoise. Full emphasis must be given, in all the discussion of this question, to the original state of that fair structure, of which Howe remarks with novel beauty: "The stately ruins are visible to every eye that bear in their front yet extant this doleful inscription: HERE GOD ONCE DWELT." ¹

166

The absence of the Spirit, which man, as originally formed, possessed as the Spirit of illumination in his understanding, and of power in all his faculties, has left the mind in moral and spiritual impotence. If regard be had to the understanding, the unconverted cannot know the things of the Spirit of God (1Cor 2.14); to the will, he cannot² be subject to the law of God

¹ See Howe's *Living Temple*.

² No true exegete will allow that the οὐ δύναται is simply equivalent to οὐ θέλει.

(Rom 8.7); to worship, he cannot call Jesus Lord (1Cor 12.3); to practice, he cannot please God (Rom 8.8); to fruit, he cannot bear fruit (Joh 15.4); to faith, he cannot receive the Spirit of truth (Joh 14.17). His familiarity with sacred truths, which he does not love, only leaves him seared in conscience and twice dead. For this impotence the regenerating power of the Holy Ghost is absolutely indispensable.

The fact of man's inability, which Scripture everywhere asserts or implies, is to be explained by the withdrawal of the Spirit, which left him in SPIRITUAL DEATH. Scripture, therefore, in terms the most express, denies to man the power or ability to think a good thought (2Cor 3.5), or to receive the things of the Spirit of God (1Cor 2.14); and declares that human nature is wholly turned away from God, and enmity against Him (Rom 8.7); and this state of the heart has a determining influence on the will in all religious and moral judgments.

That decisive fact is not apprehended in the same way in Christian and philosophic thought, even where the latter makes the nearest approximation to the truth. The uniform language of Christianity is that it is the state of the will, in other words, of the heart, that either illuminates or darkens the understanding in its spiritual or moral views, and that the relation between the two is not like ordinary knowledge, according to which we must first know a thing before we love it; for, on the contrary, the secularized mind must first love divine things with a spiritual relish before it fully knows them.

167

Hence there is an important sense in which we may affirm that it is not the intellectual knowledge which determines the conclusions of the will, but, conversely, the tendency of the will or heart which determines the judgment of the understanding. That is, beyond question, the mode of statement given in the Scriptures, which put spiritual life before true knowledge, the renewal of the heart before the possibility of a spiritual judgment. Coleridge, in his *Literary Remains*, beautifully remarks: "I believe and hold it as the fundamental article of Christianity, that I am a fallen creature; that I am of myself capable of moral evil, but not of myself capable of moral good, and that an evil ground existed in my will previously to any given act, or assignable moment of time, in my consciousness; I am born a child of wrath. This fearful mystery I pretend not to understand. I cannot even conceive the possibility of it, but I know that it is so. My conscience, the sole fountain of certainty, commands me to believe it, and would itself be a contradiction, were it not so — and what is real must be possible."

Into the discussion of the relation of free-will and divine grace we are not required, by the topic which we are treating, to enter in all its bearings. As it is often handled, it is frequently more a metaphysical debate on the laws of mind than a question in exegetical or Biblical theology. On the subject of free-will and the Spirit's agency, the following remarks may suffice: Man's free agency is postulated by every one who apprehends the subject with any measure of precision, as a point which may be described as necessary to his personality and responsibility as a rational creature. But along with the admission of spontaneity and freedom, we must not less strongly hold that man in his natural state, under the forfeiture of the Spirit, uniformly chooses the evil in preference to the good. On the one hand, he is free from co-action or constraint, even when the will is carried headlong in a career of sin. On the other hand, THE WILL ITSELF IS

168

DISEASED and vitiated. These are the two sides of the question; and when we put them together, we say with Augustin: "The will is always free, but not always good." The will cannot cease to be free, without ceasing to exist. Man could not be deprived of that freedom without the entire destruction of his mental being, as a rational and responsible creature. The liberty of the will consists in this, that he is not carried headlong by blind fatalistic impulse or by natural necessity or constraint. Whatever he does, he freely does. But the will may be free, and not

liberated. He may be a free “agent, and yet the servant of sin. The will may be free, and only exercise its freedom against the will of God. I strongly hold the duty of asserting the freedom of the will and the necessity of divine grace as two sides of an inexplicable mystery in the same way as holds true of many other theological points. My duty is to conserve the mystery which the Rationalistic understanding is only too prone to invade — to assert it, not to explain, far less to explode it.

THE SAYINGS OF JESUS ON THE SPIRIT'S WORK IN REGENERATION.

1. “*Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. ... Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit*” (Joh 3.3-6). Nicodemus came to question the Lord about His mission, and the kingdom of God which he plainly saw was about to be set up. But he was at once met by the practical question bearing on his personal salvation. By this it at once appeared that Jesus came not to be catechised and to answer curious questions, but to teach what bore upon the salvation of His hearers. He made answer rather to the state of mind than to the words of Nicodemus. He showed that a change upon the whole man was indispensably necessary, if he should ever have a right of citizenship in the kingdom of God, which does not here mean the eternal felicity, but the Messianic kingdom in all its amplitude of meaning.

169

As to the phrase “born again,” it is expounded by one class of interpreters as meaning *a second time*, by another as meaning *from above*, and the decision based on the general parallelism of Scripture falls very commonly in favour of the rendering *a second time*. But it must be admitted that neither the import of the term (ἄνωθεν) nor the style of expression used by John in speaking of regeneration lends it any countenance.¹ For my own part, I am more disposed to accept it as a peculiarity of John’s style of language borrowed from his Master, and as denoting FROM ABOVE. The Lord repeats His statement as to the necessity of regeneration, and adds the twofold principle or cause by which it is produced: *born of water and of the Spirit*. These terms intimate the meritorious and efficient cause.

The term WATER has been variously interpreted. (1) Some refer it to baptism — an opinion current in Patristic theology from the earliest times, and asserted in the Greek and Latin Church and in some of the Protestant formularies.

170

But it is untenable, as will be evident to every mind that weighs the matter in the light of common observation. The water to which the Lord refers CERTAINLY REGENERATES, and entitles those who receive it to enter the kingdom of God, from which no true member can ever be cast out again — which cannot be affirmed of baptism in every case. (2) Some take it as a

¹ Most of the versions, the Lutheran, French, English, Dutch, translate again, and have been mainly influenced by the reply of Nicodemus, who, in asking whether a man could enter his mother’s womb again, uses the term rendered *a second time* (δεύτερον) (ver. 4). On the other hand, the Greek exegetes, Origen, Chrysostom, Theophylact, and of the moderns Storr, Noesselt, Schleusner, Liicke, and others, render the word *from above*, and their arguments are these: (1) The general, though not uniform, New Testament usage (Joh 3.13, 19.11, 23; Jas 1.17, 3.15; Mar 15.38; Mat 27.51). (2) Jesus alternates the expression with another which is equivalent to *from above*, when He says that which is *born of the Spirit*. (3) The Evangelist John, when referring to 1st generation, always describes it as a birth from God (Joh 1.13; 1Joh 2.29, 3.9, 4.7, 5.1, 4, 18). (4) Nicodemus’ word, which has done more to sway expositors than anything else, is not construed with being born, but with entering again into his mother’s womb. All these reasons incline the balance toward the rendering *from above*. But, on the other hand, the general New Testament parallelism seems to incline it in favour of the rendering “a second time” (Tit 3.5; 1Pet 1.3; 2Cor 5.17). If we decide in favour of the translation born again — with most of the Protestant versions — it can only be upon the ground of the general parallelism of the apostles’ language.

hendiadys — a view in which most of the Reformed divines concur — implying that the Spirit acts with a cleansing efficacy like that of water. (3) Some of the ablest Dutch divines, for example Cocceius, Vitranga, Lampe, interpret the water here named in the light of Ezekiel's words: "Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean" (chap. 36.25). With these last interpreters I fully concur. The *sprinklings*, *ablutions*, *lustrations*, common in the Mosaic ritual, primarily referred to the removal of the guilt which rendered the person of the worshipper unclean, and removed him from all approach to God in sanctuary service. The purification of the leper, and of those who were unclean by contact with the dead, was effected by sprinkling them with water in which a portion of blood, or of the ashes of the red heifer, according to the law, was mingled (Lev 14.1; Num 19.1 ff.). It is not to be forgotten that Nicodemus was an accomplished teacher, and was profoundly conversant with all the Mosaic rites. He knew well that on the occasion of taking Israel into covenant Moses took the blood of calves and of goats, with water and scarlet wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book and all the people (Heb 9.19); and that a laver, deriving all its value from the altar, or the victims slain on it, was prepared between the altar and the entrance of the tabernacle, that they who approached the Holy One might be made clean. The water referred to by our Lord in this connection was but the ceremonial expression for the cleansing of our person by His own obedience or atoning sacrifice, proving the complete removal of guilt and of everything that could exclude us on the ground of law from the kingdom of God.

171

The second term, SPIRIT, is the personal Holy Spirit, who gives the inward capacity or fitness for the kingdom of God, who breaks the power of sin, and makes all things new. The water and the Spirit are not to be confounded. They are THE TWO CONJOINED ELEMENTS; in other words, the MERITORIOUS CAUSE and the EFFICIENT CAUSE, which introduce the sinner into the kingdom of God. The WATER and the SPIRIT are not to be explained as a mere *hendiadys*, or the use of two words for one. The terms are plainly adapted to the tenor of Ezekiel's prophecy (chap. 36.25 ff.) (comp. Zec 13.), and are both intended to be significant.

A third time, with a view to make the statement as to the necessity of regeneration more urgent and emphatic, our Lord substantially repeats His declaration: "Marvel not that I said to you, You must be born again." And then, to anticipate all cavil or exception to the mode in which that omnipotent act of God displays itself, He adds: "The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, or whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit" (ver. 8). That this analogy is taken from nature, and is much like one of His parables, is not doubtful they who have attempted, with Origen and Augustin, to dismiss the comparison and take the term translated *wind* for the personal Spirit, have nothing to say in answer to the argument that all these expressions: "bloweth," "the sound thereof," "the hearing of the sound," and the implied analogy in the words "so is every one," must be accepted as an illustrative description or comparison. The wind, as a natural phenomenon at that moment — as in the case of many of our Lord's illustrations — might arrest their attention. The points of comparison are obviously these: (1) The Spirit's agency is sovereign, like the wind blowing where it will; (2) The mode of His activity is inscrutable: it is like the wind, in regard to which we can neither say where it begins to blow nor where it is hushed to rest;

172

(3) The efficacy is irresistible and the effects indubitable; we hear the sound thereof.

2. A passage of similar import is the following: "It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing" (Joh 6.63). Christ does not say my flesh, as in the previous context, where He carries on a discussion with the men of Capernaum; and the change of expression is significant. Interpreters, not perceiving this, have been carried away with the misleading impression that

the design was merely to remove offence in the Jewish mind caused by the declaration that Jesus was the bread of life. They think that He still continues to declare that the true life of redeemed men is meritoriously connected with His atoning death. But Luther, when pressed by this text in the sacramentarian controversy, saw the change of expression, and accurately referred the words to the carnal sense of unrenewed men. It is no longer "my flesh," as in all the previous context; the expression "the flesh" has no reference to the flesh of Christ. It is the same antithesis that we find in the interview with Nicodemus: "That which is born of the flesh is flesh." The five thousand who would have made Him king were so deeply offended by His teaching, that they had in a body forsaken Him; and the reason of their conduct is here traced to the unspirituality and enmity of the carnal mind. Our Lord declares: it is the Spirit that quickeneth, or imparts the life of God — a boon requiring omnipotent power. To one acquainted with the antithesis between flesh and spirit, or with Scripture language generally, it is plain that the allusion is not to the human spirit nor to Christ's divine nature, but to the Holy Spirit.

3. We come now to what may be called, perhaps, the most conclusive passage on the Spirit's work in connection with conversion in the whole compass of Scripture. "*And when He is come He will reprove (better: convince) the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: of sin, because (better: in regard to the fact that)*

173

they believe not on me; of righteousness, because (better: in regard to the fact that) I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; of judgment, because (better: in regard to the fact that) the prince of this world is judged" (Joh 16.8-11). The passage contains a full and exhaustive description of the Spirit's work in the application of redemption, as well as of the mission of the Comforter by the Son from the Father (Joh 15.26). The verb setting forth the Spirit's function (ἐλέγξει) may bear one of two senses — TO REPROVE or TO CONVINCe. The grounds for the decision, in every special instance, are supplied by the context. The signification to reprove, which the term sometimes bears, implies that a person is reprov'd for some error which he has previously held. The other meaning, to convince, implies that a person is convinced of some truth previously unknown or unrealized. The term may either mean to reprove and refute a false opinion, or to convince one by cogent arguments and ample evidence as to truth hitherto unknown. Both senses are closely linked together. The notion of reprov'g, for which some contend, is wholly to be removed from the use of the term in this passage. Though they can both be made to have a show of probability, it is every way preferable, for various reasons, to accept the meaning TO CONVINCe.

To take one conclusive argument. All the objects are not reprehensible, and therefore the idea of reproof is not applicable to them all. Not only so; the verb is introduced but once, and not three times, in connection with the three nouns SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS, and JUDGMENT; and therefore no possible ground exists for admitting any other than a uniform sense, which is equally applicable to them all.

Another point is the signification of the particle, which is three times expressed in connection with the several members (viz. ὅτι). It cannot be rendered, as in the English version, *because*, but *in respect to the fact that*. It is here an exegetical or specifying particle,

174

setting forth that specific kind of sin, of righteousness, and of judgment, to which allusion shall be made. In all the members it must certainly be so taken, because the grammatical structure is uniform, and the maintenance of the same signification yields throughout an appropriate sense. This conclusion militates decidedly against giving to the verb the signification "to reprove," because things are mentioned which, so far from being censurable, are infinitely to be desired in the last two clauses.

We are told, indeed, by the celebrated Gerhard that some exegetes did give in this way the specific meaning to the particle (ὅτι), and yet contrived to interpret the verb as meaning *to reprove*, by the addition of certain words which it was thought might competently be supplied though they were not expressed. They filled up a supposed ellipsis as follows: He shall reprove the world of sin committed, of righteousness despised, of judgment neglected.

But when we examine that exposition, which found favour with not a few, many objections present themselves. It is a harsh ellipsis on the most indulgent consideration. Reproof always strikes on what is reprehensible — that is, either upon evil done or upon persons favoured with privileges and chargeable with neglect. But the special neglect must always be expressed. Not only so; on such a construction of the words, not one expression, but various supplementary words, must be supplied to bring out the import. It renders the whole unnatural and obscure to introduce a different verb to every noun, and it is somewhat presumptuous; for who is warranted to supplement the language of our Lord by additions which are not in the text? Nor are such additions at all in harmony with the plain and obvious tenor of Christ's words. We are not then under the impression that the verb means "to reprove" — to resort to any supplement so harsh, 'unnecessary, and unsuitable.

175

The words are natural and perspicuous as they stand, if we adopt the other rendering — To CONVINCE. The meaning is then plain. The proper idea is that of convincing one of anything not truly or fully known. And the objects, as they stand, are of such a nature that one may be convinced of them all, but not reprov'd for them all. And if we carry with us the thought that the Spirit is occupied about the sin of unbelief, which is the greatest of sins — about imputed righteousness, the only valid plea with God, acquired by Christ's obedience unto death — about the judgment of the prince of this world — the language is easy and the sentence natural.

To come to the import of the term "shall convince." When it is said that the Spirit shall convince the world — that is, men generally without the partition-wall between Jew and Gentile — it means much more than mere instruction in revealed truth. Rather it implies that the Spirit, in spite of the ignorance and resistance of the carnal mind, will bring men to such a perception of the reality and importance of saving truth that they will no longer resist its evidence. The meaning is, that He shall convince men of something hitherto unknown; and all the three members of the sentence are linked together as follows: He shall convince men in respect to the fact that they believe not on me; in other words, He will demonstrate to the mind that unbelief is a sin — yea, the greatest sin; He shall convince the world of righteousness in respect to the fact that a true and proper righteousness, has been wrought out for men by Christ's suffering and death; He shall convince the world of judgment in respect to the fact that Satan has at the great tribunal lost his cause, and is denuded of the right which he previously possessed. The efficient cause of all these effects is the personal Holy Ghost, the Comforter, and the Spirit of truth.

176

Christ's own words, as here recorded on the convincing work of the Comforter, is the *locus classicus* to which all fitly turn, whenever discussion is raised or inquiry awakened, as to the way in which the Spirit applies redemption: "and when He is come He will convince the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment" (Joh 16.8). As to the nature of that convincing influence which the Spirit brings to bear upon the mind, several things come under our consideration. He sets forth truth to the mind, and maintains it against every prepossession or contrary opinion. The Holy Spirit, by the word alone, or through the ministry of those who preach it, convinces the unbelieving world by the prophecies of the Old Testament — by the testimonies of the New Testament — by law and by gospel — so fitly and seasonably, that the unwilling are made willing, and compelled to feel and to admit in their conscience the truth of the gospel — an

impression which is followed by faith in the heart and confession with the mouth. They are pressed by the force of truth, and yield. More particularly, He convinces the mind in A THREEFOLD WAY, viz. that unbelief is the greatest sin; that the righteousness procured by Christ is the only righteousness which avails before God; and that all the right or claim which Satan had to the possession of man, once his captive but now redeemed, is so invalidated — because the process has been decided against him — that he cannot tyrannize over any but by their own will.

Let me briefly notice the several objects in reference to which the Spirit yields His convincing influence.

1. The first object is UNBELIEF, the sin of contravening and rejecting the proposals of the gospel. The Redeemer, the true interpreter of His own words, subjoined what sin He meant when He added: "In respect to the fact that they believe not on me." This explanation by the Lord Himself refutes the opinion of Piscator and others, that the allusion is to His crucifixion by the Jews, as well as another opinion,

177

that the expression must be generally understood of every sin committed. These interpreters are all of the class who hold that the verb which we render "convince" must have the meaning of "reprove," and will not admit the exegetical or specifying force of the particle (ὅτι), which we have rendered "in respect to the fact that." But the Lord's meaning is express, pointing to the sin of unbelief, which, abstractly considered, is a violation of a divine command, and, concretely considered, is a refusal to accept the merits of a divine Redeemer.

To understand the criminality of unbelief, it may be remarked that it contracts guilt from the law, as the latter pronounces condemnation generally on all disobedience to the expressed will of God. The law may be taken in a twofold way — that is, as having a general and a special use. The first table of the law condemns generally all unbelief toward the word of God, and charges it as sin.

To be more explicit, let me add that the gospel has its own rule in reference to its own credenda, or things to be believed. There an object of faith is presented to our view, with a special rule or mode divinely prescribed for apprehending it; and, according to this rule, the man must act who wishes to be saved. To that rule or mode many of the names applied to faith are found to have respect. Thus it is called God's commandment (1Joh 3.23), the way of righteousness (2Pet 2.21), the law of faith (Rom 3.27), the work of God (Joh vi. 29), and compliance with it is called obedience to the faith (Rom 1.5). In all these passages allusion is clearly made to that rule, way, or method by which the blessings of redemption are applied and conferred. But, on the contrary, he who contravenes that rule, and refuses to walk in that way, "incurs the guilt of disobedience. Not only so: when unbelief, which is just an act in opposition to the tenor of the gospel, is persistently and resolutely carried out, the law comes forth to fulminate against it.

178

The sin of unbelief is here described, with all the enormous guilt attaching to it, as a rejection of the proposals of reconciliation, as the chief and the supreme sin, because a sin against the remedy — as sinful in itself, and as preventing the remission of all other sins. As unbelief is the sin by eminence, it is upon this that the convincing influence of the Spirit is mainly brought to bear.

Considered in its consequences, this sin of unbelief has its immediate ground of condemnation in the fact that all other sins, original and actual, with all their guilt, are remissible through faith in Christ. But this sin involves the rejection of the graciously provided remedy; and final unbelief has nothing to interpose between the sinner and righteous condemnation. Hence

Luther was wont to affirm that unbelief alone condemns, since it makes the person evil and the works evil

The sin of unbelief is here described as if it were the only sin, because, according to the happy remark of Augustin, while it continues, all other sins are retained, and when it departs all other sins are remitted. Not only so: it constantly produces new sins. For, as faith may be considered either as it apprehends Christ or as it works by love, unbelief in like manner may be considered either as refusing Christ's redeeming work, or as it works by sin against the conscience. Unbelief may be called the mother sin, because it not only leaves all guilt remaining, but gives force to reigning sins, and origin to a polluted conscience. But however great and perilous this sin may be, such is the ignorance in which men naturally are involved, that its criminality is totally unknown till it is brought home by the CONVINCING INFLUENCE OF THE HOLY GHOST the Comforter. Conscience may convince men of ordinary sins, but never of the sin of unbelief. Of the enormity of this sin no man was ever convinced but by the Holy Ghost Himself.

2. The second object of which they are convinced is

179

RIGHTEOUSNESS, which is immediately after the former brought before the mind in order to prevent despair. This expression must not be understood as meaning that He who was crucified on the charge of sedition and blasphemy is proved to be innocent and righteous. That interpretation is supported by ingenious arguments, and specially by this, that God vindicated His innocence by raising Him from the dead; but it is by no means suited to the context. For, when Christ promises the Comforter to convince them of the sin of unbelief, He must be understood as meaning unbelief as to His Messiahship and saving work, and not merely as to His being a righteous man. The first clause presupposes that He is a Saviour, and so must the second. To convince the world of righteousness, must mean that the Spirit gives convincing evidence, not merely that His cause is good, and that He is innocent, but that in Him is found the righteousness which the world needs, the imputed righteousness which was graciously provided for us and becomes ours by faith.

When it is added: He shall convince the world of righteousness, in respect to the fact that I go to the Father, and ye see me no more, we see that the righteousness is equivalent to an obedience which culminated in suffering and death, and not an infused righteousness, as the Romanists allege; nor God's essential righteousness, as was alleged by Oslander, and as is re-echoed by the modern Plymouthists.

According to the correct interpretation of Luther and the great divines of the Lutheran Church, the meaning is: "By my departure — that is, by my death and sufferings — a valid righteousness has been procured for all true believers;" for all the actions of Him who is by eminence the Servant of the Lord are at once mediatorial and redeeming. The figure is taken from a returning exile or traveller who has been from home; and in this case from the end of that work of abasement, or atonement and expiation, for the completion of which He had come forth from the Father (Joh 16.28).

180

The same style of language had been several times used before, not only to the disciples (Joh 13.33), but on previous occasions to the Jews (Joh 7.34, 8.21). This whole style of language presupposes a commission or office to be discharged, a coming forth from the Father to perform it, and a return with all the demonstrations of acceptance to Him who sent Him. The language implies all Christ's offices, but especially His meritorious work as the Servant of the Lord and the High Priest of our profession (Heb 3.1). The additional words: "and ye shall see me no more," are a mere supplement to the previous thought, conveying little more than a filling up of the description by a reference to the mental state of the disciples, who must needs prepare

themselves for losing that visible intercourse and that exchange of thought and speech in which they had found their satisfaction. But the appended phrase is a mere adjunct, and no constituent of the righteousness such as the previous clause involves, the allusion being merely to the apostles.

This language intimates that the righteousness which avails with God consists not, as the Romanist will have it, in that which is infused, nor in the mere act of faith regarded as our obedience, as the Arminian will have it — but in His going to the Father by His meritorious and atoning death. It implies that He who was sent on such an errand, and who returned with all the tokens of cordial welcome and great reward, must have brought in the everlasting righteousness and sealed up the vision and prophecy (Dan 9.24). But of that righteousness the world must be CONVINCED, if it is to be of any value to the sons of men. It must be duly announced or testified by apostles orally and in writing, and by the Holy Ghost the Comforter inwardly (Joh 15.26, 27). Hence it is said that the Holy Ghost is sent to convince the world of this everlasting or imputed righteousness — that is, to show men that they who are denuded of any proper righteousness should, without delay, avail themselves of that which has magnified the law and made it honourable.

181

3. The third object of which the world is convinced by the Comforter is JUDGMENT. This benefit stands very closely related to the former. The righteousness which Christ acquired by His going to the Father, as already explained, and which is applied by imputation to all them that believe, puts them in a friendly relation to God, and God in a friendly relation to them, because they are righteous in Christ's righteousness; and this is the reason why our Lord immediately subjoins the mention of judgment. In due order, and based upon the former, comes deliverance from Satan.

As to the JUDGMENT here mentioned, it is not to be interpreted as meaning the authority which Christ, as victor over Satan, and accepted Surety, wields as supreme Lord of heaven and earth. That view, embodying a precious truth, is too general here, and misses the point of the clause, though held by Chrysostom, Cyrill, Piscator, and many recent commentators. Obviously, the import of the words does not refer to what is deposited in Christ as a potentate, able to disarm the strong man armed, but to what was inflicted on Satan, when the cause which was before the supreme tribunal for final adjudication was decided against him. The work of the second Adam, satisfying every claim of law and justice, terminated Satan's right, and reversed his authority acquired by conquest. We are led to this conclusion, as in the two previous clauses, by the exegetical or specifying particle (ὅτι), which must still have the same meaning, and only declare what had been yet but obscurely expressed. It is but one thing, only more fully declared. It is not statement and reason of the statement, as given in the English Authorized Version. The meaning is as follows: He shall convince the world of judgment *in respect to the fact that the prince of the world has been judged*.

182

The use of the perfect passive (κεκρίται) intimates that it was within a few hours — that it was as good as done — a mode of speech by no means uncommon in our Lord's style (see John 12.31). The meaning is, that Satan has been judged in the sense that the great cause has gone against him, and that he has no more right to retain the world, which he previously held by right of conquest.

What is THIS WORLD, and who is its prince? It is not the fabric of the universe, which God created, upholds, and rules; but the world of men seduced by the tempter, and held by a certain claim of right; his subjects and his sons doing the lusts of their father (Eph 2.2; John 8.44). The phraseology is borrowed from a, legal proceeding carried on by two contending parties — Satan,

on the one side contending that he had a right of property in men who had become his subjects; that a rebel cannot be restored to favour, but must be left in his hands; that the highly extolled rectitude of the supreme Judge must carry out the same sentence on men that had been carried out, and was for ever to be carried out, on himself; — the Mediator, on the other side, appealing to the fact that, as He took man's place under the broken law to fulfil its obligations and bear its penalty in their room, justice as well as mercy required that Satan's right of conquest should be reversed, and the world given to Him who was its second Adam and Lord of all. Such was the cause to be finally and irrevocably decided, and, on the ground of Christ's satisfaction and sufficient ransom, the adjudication was rightfully decided against the prince of this world, who was to be cast out of his dominions and compelled to surrender the world — that is, the human family — into other hands. He can no longer keep his goods in peace when the stronger than he appears upon the scene (Luk 11.21; Isa 49.24; 1Cor 15.54). Of all this, THE HOLY GHOST THE COMFORTER COMES 'TO CONVINCe THE HEARERS OF THE GOSPEL, to whom the apostles testified (Joh 15.26, 27). Men are thus convinced that

183

they may be free indeed (Joh 8.36), no more subjects of the tempter, no more bound to obey him, but loyal subjects of Christ, and made willing in a day of His power (Psa 110.3).

As to the issue of this convincing process, exegetes are by no means at one. Many who are correct in expounding the term "convince" assume unwarrantably a twofold result, and assert that it may sometimes end in the obdurate mind and sometimes in saving faith. Even Calvin arrives at the conclusion, that under the term WORLD may be comprehended an allusion to hypocrites and reprobates as well as to those who are truly to be converted. Tholuck, after putting together a variety of opinions, comes to no firm decision. On the other hand, practical writers and preachers, weighing the passage in its bearings upon religious experience, come, for the most part, to the conclusion that the result of this convincing process ends in true conversion. I cannot but regard that as the only true and legitimate interpretation.

As so much uncertainty prevails, I have gone into a full consideration of this passage, with all the light reflected from the history of interpretation, believing that this was by no means unnecessary. My full persuasion is, that THE CONVINCING PROCESS OF THE SPIRIT, thus described by Christ in the last evening of His intercourse with the disciples, is so put as to bring out the successive steps, or the order of salvation, through which the Spirit leads the awakened mind; and that we can only view it as issuing in a sound conversion. I hold that it means to convince by clear and cogent arguments. It brings the ruin and the remedy together. It is a thunderbolt against all the views of Legalists.

We shall next consider Christ's testimony to the blasphemy or sin against the Holy Ghost. "*Whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in the world to come*" (Mat 12.32).

184

On the occasion of healing a demoniac, the Pharisees wished to invalidate the proof of Christ's divine mission by the allegation that the miracle was not performed by the finger of God, but by Beelzebub, the prince of the devils. Without explicitly stating that they had committed; or were committing, the sin against the Holy Ghost, He gives them a solemn warning that there is a sin against the Holy Ghost which is unpardonable. He speaks absolutely of an irremissible sin; for all other sin can be remitted on the ground of Christ's satisfaction through faith and repentance. But with the solemnity of an oath by Himself, as the "verily verily" indicates, He declares that this sin has no forgiveness.

As to the nature of this sin against the Holy Ghost, it is shrouded in a certain mystery, but it is neither calculated nor intended to give perplexity to any Christian mind. It may be difficult to

define it; and the most conflicting opinions were entertained among the ancient Fathers, and downwards from the Reformation times. Thus Tertullian, Hilary, and other Fathers maintained that the sin against the Spirit meant blasphemy, not against the human nature of Christ, which is pardonable, but against His divine nature, which is unpardonable. Cyprian explained it of apostasy, or the denial of Christ, and consequently held that the lapsed could scarcely, if at all, be forgiven. Origen expounded the passage of those sins which are committed subsequent to baptism. But these essentially Novatian comments, when fully carried out, come into collision with the Creed, which declares: "I believe in the forgiveness of sins." Athanasius is not consistent with himself. We may perhaps distribute the vast variety of interpretations scattered over the works of expositors, and over the theological systems of divines, into the three following classes:

1. Those which virtually make it a sin possible only when Christ was among men in the exercise of His personal ministry. Chrysostom and Jerome explain it as if our Lord meant to say: he that speaks against the Son or man, regarding Him as nothing more than man,

185

but he who ascribes these miracles to Satan, while discerning in them the indications of divine power, shall never be forgiven; for this is the unpardonable sin against the Holy Ghost, by whom Christ performed His mighty deeds. Pfaff and Klinkenberg, in last century, strongly asserted that interpretation.

2. Another view propounded by Augustin makes the sin against the Holy Ghost equivalent to final impenitence. A very large class of writers in all ages have held this view as the simplest and least complicated. The followers of Melanchthon in the Lutheran Church, many of our Scotch divines — such as Guthrie in his *Trial of a Saving Interest*, Chalmers, and others — as well as writers in all countries who have followed Augustin, have accepted this comment as the best.

3. Calvin, dissenting from Augustin's view because it seemed not to do justice to the peculiar expression, that this sin shall not be forgiven *either in this world or in that which is to come*, held that it is resistance to the truth conjoined with malice, though the evidence in behalf of the truth of the Christian faith was such as rendered it impossible to plead ignorance. The thought is supposed to be, that this sin is committed before the close of life, and while the person has still a period to live in this world. And it is alleged that the distinguishing mark of this sin is conscious resistance or deliberate opposition to conclusive evidence supplied by the Spirit of God. The men who commit this sin are thought to be convinced of the truth of the Christian religion, and yet oppose and blaspheme it, not so much from sudden passion and the force of temptation, as from wilful malice. It is argued that while God gives pardon to all manner of sin through the exercise of faith and repentance, the sin against the Holy Ghost is unique and irremissible, because conscious resistance is present to the mind, and because the voluntary denial of divine troth is combined with hatred and malice.

186

This opinion of Calvin was adopted with a very general consent by the subsequent divines of the Reformed Church. If I were to adduce a catena of Reformed divines, they would be found almost uniformly to follow Calvin's opinion, and frequently with an exaggerated statement both of the extent of a gracious work of the Spirit on such minds, and of the almost Satanic character of their conscious resistance. This comes out in such writers as Maresius, Maestricht, Cocceius; Hoornbeck, and others.

One guiding principle, however, against excess of statement is supplied by the fact that the evidence furnished by the Spirit, and resisted by those who so sin against Him, is **ONLY HIS TESTIMONY**, not **HIS WORK ON THE HEART**; for (1) the latter is irresistible; and (2) he that hath begun a good work will perform it. Whatever evidence is brought to bear on the mind, it is but rational conviction derived from testimony, not the efficacious change of heart. And this

enables us to draw a line between the Lutheran and Reformed exposition of this topic. The Lutheran exposition holds that only the regenerate are guilty of the sin against the Holy Ghost. So Gerhard, Balduin, Hülsemann, Quenstedt, and all their eminent divines speak. On the contrary, the canons of the Synod of Dort, giving as they do the most admirably correct expression of all the doctrines of special grace, include among the errors which are to be rejected, the opinion that the regenerate may be guilty of this sin.

It is commonly held that this is the same sin that is referred to by the sacred writers in those other passages of Scripture (Heb 6.4-6, 10.29; 1Joh 5.16). It is true Athanasius, Basil, Jerome do not regard these passages in the Epistle to the Hebrews and in John as referring to the sin against the Holy Ghost. Calvin says: "The apostle agrees with the Master."

187

I have given the principal opinions on this unpardonable sin, and endeavoured to distribute them into three classes. For my own part, I incline to Augustin's opinion; at all events, I am convinced that the notion of FINAL IMPENITENCE must be taken along with us as a main element in any opinion which may be adopted or maintained on this subject.

The Spirit inhabits and replenishes all the mental powers, and supplies them with the help which makes them fit for active service. Discussions have long been carried on as to the relation and priority of the understanding and will, and as to the influence which the one may be regarded as exercising on the other. Without complicating our inquiry, as is too frequently done, both on the Calvinistic and Arminian side, with discussions which yield no satisfactory result as to the priority of the understanding and its necessary influence on the will, we may better describe the change which is effected by regeneration as taking effect ON ALL THE POWERS OF THE SOUL, and as underlying the exercise of them all. We consider it as displaying its various modes of activity, as so many phenomena in the compass of all the several faculties in all that constitutes the truly Christian life; and we would rather speak of what is natural and intelligible, viz. of the entire soul found in various conditions and moods, than separate the mental powers into so many divisions or compartments, each acting upon the other, and opening the gateway for the other. If the entire soul is a unity and only found in certain states of mind, as Witsius was wont to represent it in theology, and as Brown was wont to represent it in philosophy, we may more fitly describe the Spirit's operations *as taking effect on the whole soul*, than limit ourselves to one faculty acting on another.

The restoration of the Spirit takes for granted that He comes in TO INHABIT THE WHOLE MAN, according to the idea of anthropology, with which all Scripture is replete, and becomes anew for us the indefectible source of light and life and fruitfulness, as well as of perseverance and progressive holiness.

188

The allusions to the inhabitation of the Spirit are manifold and various. As a new impelling power, He occupies the human faculties, and so pervades them that He is said to dwell in us and walk in us (2Cor 6.16); and the regenerate man is said to HAVE the Spirit of Christ as the consequence of that gracious inhabitation. The Spirit condescends to occupy all the chambers of our hearts, and to dwell in them.

We may trace the Spirit's work on THE MENTAL POWERS, and show that there is a divine influence decisive as to the action of them all. A single glance at the Spirit's operation on the understanding, will, and conscience, will suffice to show that, in the case of the regenerate, the Holy Spirit is the efficient cause of all their spiritual activity.

With regard to the UNDERSTANDING, all spiritual light is derived from the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of the Lord Jesus enlightening the eyes of their understanding

(Eph 1.17). When the question is raised, Does the illumination belong solely to prevenient grace? it is necessary to distinguish. In the first act of illumination, the Spirit acts much in the same way as when He commanded it to shine out of darkness (2Cor 4.6). But when the man has received the power of vision, he uses it for the further increase of his knowledge in the way of co-operating grace. The truths which he believed to the saving of the soul had reference to God, to himself, and to the adaptation of the atonement. By the illumination of the Spirit, he acquires wholly different views of all these points and of God, who is no longer regarded as an indulgent being, nor as a tyrant, but as a gracious Father, all whose perfections are glorified by the atonement. And as to ourselves, He shows us the ruin and the remedy.

The Spirit's operation is not less conspicuous on the WILL. The principal effect of the Spirit's activity is seen in a new principle of spiritual life diffused through all the mental powers, and inclining the soul to yield itself to Christ in the exercise of faith and subjection, as now enabled or made fit both to will and to do.

189

And as to the CONSCIENCE, the sanctification of the Spirit contributes to a good conscience. In other words, the conscience purged with the sprinkling of the blood of Christ by the effectual application of the Spirit, is committed to the Spirit, who corrects and teaches it, who purifies and comforts it, from day to day.

II. The effectually called become ADOPTED SONS, and are translated by the power of the Spirit into the family of God, according to the canon, that whatever is imparted in the exercise of Christ's grace implies the opposite in our state by nature, they who were born into God's family were in the opposite family — in the family of Satan — before.

It is the more necessary to set this in its proper light, because many do not hesitate to say, under the bias of a false system, that God is universal Father, and that all men are His children. They hold THE FATHERHOOD OF GOD in virtue of an alleged unbroken relation formed by creation, and that all men, without exception or distinction, belong to the family of God, much in the same way as Pope expresses it in his universal prayer. Children, forsooth, who only disobey and dishonour their Father! No: all men by nature belong to a family antagonistic to the family of God, and do the lusts of a father described as a liar and murderer from the beginning. That is a position in harmony with the doctrine of Christ and His apostles. Men cannot, at one and the same moment, be of their father the devil, as Cain was (1Joh 4.10-12), and as the Jews were, when our Lord declared to them their family (Joh 8.44), and be recognised or called the sons of God. The whole doctrine of our Lord and His apostles sets forth that sinners and all unregenerate men are children of the evil one.

Though the doctrine of human depravity was not represented by the early Christian writers, especially of the

190

Greek Church, with all the accuracy with which they were delineated in after times, it must be admitted that these early writers speak: of men as subjected to the evil power with a Biblical fulness and accuracy to which modern theology can make no pretensions. They lay emphasis on THE POWER OF SATAN. The representations given in the early Christian literature as to the sinful power under which the human race has fallen, may be described as greatly more full and suggestive than in the literature of the present day. With regard to Satan that is emphatically true. With the Christian Church in post-apostolic times Satan was, a reality, and his kingdom a fact, with which they daily felt themselves encompassed. The Fathers cannot find terms sufficiently strong to delineate the power of Satan, the seductive influence which he wields, and the subjection to his dominion under which men have fallen. In a word, the Patristic literature gives the utmost prominence to the terrible power and tyranny of Satan, though by no means

greater than the subject warrants; and this subjection is always traced to sin. There is no disposition with them to shrink from representing men as children of the wicked one.

In the translation of the individual from the one family to the other, it must be borne in mind that the Spirit is represented in Scripture as the great agent. He makes Christ and His people one, for the acceptance of their persons and the renovation of their natures. I refer to this the rather because there are schools of theology which make *the work of the Spirit and the commencement of His operations subsequent to the believing reception of Christ*; and many, under the spell of a theory from which they never escape, make the participation of the Redeemer's work turn in the last resort on the self-application of the individual; and setting out from the universal call of the gospel, they look with suspicion on any express allusion either to human inability or to the effectual application of the Spirit. But the language of Scripture in reference to this application is so express as to leave no room for a moment's hesitation.

191

Thus, if we consider any aspect of the question, the Spirit is said to shed abroad the love of God upon the heart, which must be taken *as the decisive turning-point* in that application (Rom 5.5). The Holy Spirit is designated "the Spirit of adoption," — a phrase which, according to the analogy supplied by every similar expression, means that He is the author of the adoption (Rom 8.15). The Holy Spirit is the efficient cause in communicating the blessings of redemption; for the merits of Christ and the efficacy of the Spirit are placed together in the inseparable connection which follows: "But ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God" (1Cor 6.11). When the gospel produces saving effects, it is said to come not in word only, but in power, and in the Holy Ghost (1Thes 1.5). The sanctification of the Spirit is inserted by Paul and Peter as the intermediate link between election on the part of God and faith on the part of man (2Thes 2.13). The Apostle Peter declares that men are chosen by the separation which the Spirit produces to the belief of the truth and to the sprinkling of "the blood of Christ (1Pet 1.2). But there is one title of the Spirit which is peculiarly significant and suggestive in this light — THE SPIRIT OF FAITH; that is, the author of faith (2Cor 4.13), by whom we call Jesus Lord, and confide in Him. The conclusion to which we come, from these testimonies, is, that in the application of redemption there is but one great agent — not the force of human will, according to the semi-Pelagian opinion — not a double factor, according to the Synergistic theory. The sole cause is the Holy Spirit operating through the word — that is, by the proclamation of law and gospel by which He enlightens the understanding, and inclines the will to receive Christ's finished work.

192

The ADOPTION OF SONS, into which Christians are ushered by the Spirit (Rom 8.15), differs from the privilege of justification in this respect, that it brings the Christian before God in the new relation of a child to a father. Whether we regard this state of sonship, with many divines, as one of the sides of justification, or as a further privilege into which the believer passes without any interval of time, THE ADOPTION OF SONS (υιοθεσία) is, in a doctrinal point of view, of the utmost moment in the organism of divine truth, because it preserves the equipoise, and prevents the juridical idea from being exclusive. As it is set forth by the apostles, we find adoption in THREE several delineations: (1) Paul describes the privilege of sons as contrasted with the position of a servant (Gal 4.7); (2) John describes adoption in connection with regeneration, and with the underlying truth — that we are made sons by grace because Christ is the Son by nature (Joh 1.13; 1Joh 3.1); (3) the Synoptists, preserving our Lord's words, describe adoption in connection with the restoration of the divine image (Mat 5.45). We have only to put together that threefold description of the apostles as the complement of each other, to give an exhaustive outline of the whole doctrine of adoption.

The justified person, passing into the relation of a son, enters into a relation of love, which we shall delineate in a few particulars. (1) The foundation of sonship is based in the incarnation of the eternal Son, who became the Son of man, and partaker of flesh and blood, that His people might become the sons of God. It is not some merely inward change produced by the operations of the Spirit that the Father loves; *He loves them in His Son*, and extends to them the same complacency and favour which rest on Him. This is the great objective ground of their adoption and of their joint participation of that love wherewith He loves the Son, as far as a created being, in virtue of the federal and vital union, can share it. (2) The receptive hand by which Christians are made partakers of sonship and joint participants of the

193

Holy Ghost, according to their measure, is FAITH, and the accompanying union which true faith involves. (3) The adoption common to believers, and essentially the same in all, has no varying degrees, but one equal degree wherever it is found, and it is perfect at once. "Now are we the sons of God" (1Joh 3.2). Hence no warrant exists for the opinion that there are distinctions or varying degrees in the love of God to His adopted children so far as this objective privilege is concerned; for on each of them rests that divine complacency which rests on the only-begotten Son. This adoption carries with it demonstrations of divine love, pledges of paternal care and salutary discipline, as well as foretastes of glory, honour, and immortality, and conformity to the image of Him who is the first-born among many brethren.

(4) It is a privilege about which the Christian, replenished by the Holy Spirit, is to be left in no uncertainty and doubt, for the Spirit makes intercession with groanings that cannot be uttered, and bears witness with our spirit that we are the children of God (Rom 8.16). On this central point of Biblical doctrine many divines expatiate, some in one interest, some in another, in order, if possible, to find a remedy for those controversies and debates that have long been carried on as to the matter of a sinner's acceptance. Thiersch, in the erudite lectures in which he discusses the principles of Catholicism and Protestantism, speaks of this doctrine as furnishing a sort of meeting-point, and proposes an *irénicum* on this basis of agreement. He goes so far as to say that the Romish doctrine, antagonistic to the position that all believers are equally accepted on the ground of the Redeemer's merits, is really met by this doctrine of adoption as a common basis of agreement.

The doctrine of assurance, or the witness of the Spirit, connected with the adoption of sons, demands a few words of exposition (Rom 8.16). This witness is spoken of as the well-known accompaniment of adoption.

194

And as the result of the Holy Spirit's operations, we cannot suppose that the testimony of the Spirit, of which the Apostle Paul speaks, was AN EXTRAORDINARY INWARD REVELATION, imparted only to apostles and to a few specially selected individuals of the apostolic age, as Romish divines are in the habit of affirming, but as a common Christian experience. It is not an exceptional gift, but the ordinary criterion and accompaniment of adoption. The notion, however, that he is no true Christian who does not enjoy an ever-shining assurance, as an unclouded sun in the firmament, has as little to say in its defence. The possibility of attaining assurance, and the duty of possessing it (*potest et debet*), must be inculcated. But beyond that we are not warranted to go, and may not presume to go.

The subject of assurance was so identified with faith in the theology of the Reformation as to be well-nigh inseparable and indistinguishable; 'and the Puritan doctrine may be called an advance to a clearer view. While these divines carefully distinguished it from faith, they contended that, in God's design, and according to the constitution of things, assurance could neither be retained in an unholy walk, nor emerge upon the consciousness apart from the Spirit's testimony and the

renovated will. While they directed the eye of faith to the all-sufficiency of the Redeemer in a way not differing from the Reformers, they suspended assurance neither upon joyous emotions of acceptance alone, nor on the immediate revelation of the Spirit alone, irrespective of the graces of the new creation. And in one of the most precious chapters of the Confession, they have set forth their conclusion. In their day they furnished a corrective to an *excess*. An equally great *defect* required to be supplied in the following century, of which Warburton was a representative divine, when it was necessary to exhibit assurance as an incumbent duty, and as a benefit productive of higher holiness and deeper love, as well as of a consecrated life. Venn represents it as one great cause of Wesley's success, that he urged Christians not to rest without joy in God from receiving the atonement.

195

I cannot omit to notice, in this connection, the fact that, according to the uniform testimony of history, all success in extending religion, and in promoting its revival, has been always connected with dependence on the Spirit of life, and that the refusal to regard the Spirit as the author of conversion and the source of spiritual life, puts a Church or an individual beyond the pale of the truly Christian. Such a religion has no claim to be classed among evangelical communions. A religion not acting in the Spirit as the principle of action, can only be the religion of nature. The essential feature of Christianity, according to our Lord's own delineation, is the new birth; and so indispensable is it, that without the new nature there can be no evangelical health or progress, nor any interest in Christ and in the blessings of His purchase.

To go back to the Lutheran type of doctrine — the eldest daughter of the Reformation — we find that this Church was well-nigh stranded when the Synergistic controversy took its rise within her pale. Whoever has bestowed any attention on that discussion, is aware that nothing but the profound views already lodged in the mind of the Christian community on the vast ruin of the fall, and on the indispensable necessity of the efficacious grace of the Holy Spirit, at that time saved the life of the Church. The majority maintained, agreeably to Scripture, that the natural man, apart from what the Holy Spirit does in Him, can do absolutely nothing, and that he needs to be replenished by the Spirit of life. The Church righted again by adopting the position that *the subject of conversion cannot also be a co-operating factor*, and that the sole cause of conversion and faith is the Holy Spirit working through the word — that is, as giving a full proclamation of law and gospel — no Protestant Confession has assigned any agency for the human will as a THIRD CAUSE; for to do so were to fall into the logical absurdity of confounding the subject of conversion with its cause.

196

To show the dangers of Synergism, we quote a sentence from a German writer: "This article," says he,¹ "did not fail to exercise a leavening influence both in a forward and backward direction — backward, on the doctrine of original sin; forward, on that of justification." We believe that this is the inevitable consequence, as a few words will show.

With regard to the first, the doctrine of ORIGINAL SIN, it is obvious that a theory which asserts a synergism, and by this means qualifies the sole operation of the Holy Spirit, does not presuppose a human nature which is subjected to such a moral change as is seen in the issue of the fall. The rationale of every gospel doctrine, and, in a particular manner, of the Spirit's operations, is furnished by clear discoveries as to the extent of inherent depravity. And to assume a doctrine of original sin less than coextensive with the essential powers of the soul — though it has left that essence undestroyed, and still capable of extrication from the ruin — is to neutralize the provisions of the Holy Spirit's work.

¹ Schubring in Rudelbach's *Zeitschrift für Lutherische Theologie*, 1848, p. 316.

Not only so; the effect of synergistic views on man's JUSTIFICATION by imputed righteousness is not less disastrous. It is an attempt, as futile as foolish, to accept a surety-righteousness and repudiate a surety-strength, exercised upon man by the omnipotent efficacy of the Holy Spirit, when not an argument can be adduced against the one but may equally be directed against the other. And hence Luther said, with his usual vehemence: "What need of God, what need of Christ, what need of the Spirit, if free-will can accomplish all?" The entire success in the last resort is made to hinge on the individual himself.

With others in this age, and they are a very numerous class, all the application of redemption is resolved into the exercise of natural power as the effect of mere moral suasion.

197

The man is thrown back on himself. It seems to exalt and flatter man's nature, but it paves the way for its deeper degradation. Here I may notice that Amyraldus has been followed by not a few in the unhappy distinction which he drew between the physical and moral ability to believe in Christ. He asserted that man had the former, though he had not the latter. That notion of ability, copiously imported into America, gave rise to many ill-considered statements which can only be received with caution. Whatever system leaves human nature as it is, to make the best of its resources, or to be wrought upon merely by a class of motives, though the most sublime, but which introduce no new element into fallen humanity, is as little Christian in its essence as it is stale and flat in its conception. If man's soul is not to be elevated from its degradation by the regenerating grace of the Spirit, which alone can raise it, but flattered with its ability and power — if nothing but a class of motives, higher indeed than Plato's, but yet mere motives, is brought to bear upon it, no high conception is formed of the transforming influence of Christianity. That system of moral suasion often imposes on its own advocates: it seems so constructed as to avoid the outward appearance of Pelagianism, because it limits the view merely to the matter of accepting salvation as a gift. But it is only in appearance, and not in essence, that it evades the grosser form of Pelagianism, by limiting the language to the reception of a gift. Thus, while there are schools of theology, such as the Puritans and Jansenists, which have endeavoured to vindicate the spiritual life as a reality, the views in question contribute directly, and not in their remote effect, to obliterate all the distinction between spirit and flesh, grace and nature. Of the fruits of Naturalism, under whatever form it appears, whether it be Pelagianism, Arminianism, Socinianism, Rationalism, we have seen enough in the history of the Church to be convinced that it does not tend, with all its high praise of man's ability and dignity, to elevate our race. If all good flows from the Spirit of God, down to the very first desire, then dependence and prayer constitute the only fitting attitude.

198

The leading principle which helps us to find our way through all the difficulties of these questions is, that THE SPIRIT, in His return to the human heart, ANTICIPATES THE WILL — that is, works in us to will, at the first moment of conversion and at every subsequent step. The first desire, wish, or resolution to return to God, as well as the first prayer offered with this end in view, is from the Holy Spirit. That all spiritual good emanates from the Spirit of God, is a simple formula, which keeps every inquirer in this department right. That the Spirit's power and grace precede the will is a maxim to be carried with us, unless we are prepared to ascribe a merit to the first step, or to view the first step as originated on the man's own side.

And from the moment that the soul begins to act in spiritual things) it acts with its newly acquired spiritual powers, imparted by the Spirit of God. The Spirit's operation, *always spoken of in the present tense*, and as prevenient grace, prompts the soul to co-operate with its newly acquired powers of life. But the expression SPIRITUAL POWERS does not imply a change on man's essential nature, or the donation of faculties which were never found in the human mind

before, but simply a new aptitude and power to comply with what is truly good, as derived from the Holy Spirit. With a new will, that is, a will renovated and endowed with a spiritual capacity, the soul becomes active, and co-operates with God.

We have thus seen that the application of redemption is from first to last by the Holy Spirit; that the faith by which we receive the adoption of sons is the first point; and that this faith in man's heart is only from the Spirit of God, which is the second point. If there be admitted any natural power or capacity in man for the exercise of faith, this necessarily overthrows in the second instance the great doctrine of divine grace that was announced in the first.

199

This doctrine of the Spirit, therefore, really maintains, more than anything else, a Church's connection with evangelical religion; and where this is wanting, nothing can intercept or arrest a Church's descent to the lowest depths of naturalism. The Wesleyan system, when it diverged from the path which Whitfield continued to maintain, imbibed most of the Arminian tenets; but it was rescued from the irreparable ruin that had otherwise awaited it by the fact that it unequivocally recognised the Holy Spirit as the sole author of regeneration and of spiritual life; for Wesley said with unhesitating decision: "There is no more *of power* than of merit in man; but as all merit is in the Son of God, so all power is in the Spirit of God; and therefore every man, in order to believe unto salvation, must receive the Holy Ghost." They conceded too much as to the extent of the Spirit's operations, but they retained what was essential to spiritual life. But the theology that contemplates nothing higher than moral suasion and free-will, and which repudiates the supernatural, is necessarily divested of all evangelical power as well as of all permanence and strength. The current objection to the Spirit's work, that man must have inherent strength to believe, because divine wrath rests on those who do not believe, is but a plausible sophism. If it had any meaning, it would be as applicable to the law as to faith, and to the work of Christ as well as to the work of the Spirit. If a man must have power in the one case, he must have power in the other case. He who vindicates the Mediator's work against the sceptic or Deist, cannot without the most flagrant inconsistency take Pelagian ground against the Spirit's work. There is not an argument against the one that is not equally capable of being directed against the other, and he who rejects the one is bound in consistency to reject the other. There is as little interference with human liberty in receiving the work of the Spirit to regenerate, as in receiving the work of the Son to redeem and justify.

200

The loss of the Spirit and the restoration of the Spirit — the former the result of the fall, and the latter the result of the atonement — have thus passed before us in review. They are the two most momentous facts in the history of man. They are associated with the first man's sin and the second man's reparation. The fall left the human heart, once the temple of God, an utter ruin, because the Great Inhabitant who dwelt in it was under the necessity of leaving the polluted spot. With the Spirit's return to the human heart, on the ground of that everlasting righteousness which Christ ushered in, a new creation began to dawn, and a new kingdom entered which will be dissolved no more. It is of little use — except for the analogy — to recall what might have been had the first Adam fulfilled the conditions imposed on him by his Creator. The human race would have enjoyed without forfeiture the irrevocable aid and presence of the Holy Spirit beyond the hazards of falling. And the same constant presence of the Spirit, with all the efficacy of His omnipotent grace, which the redeemed will for ever enjoy, would have been transmitted to his descendants of the human family upon a tenure liable to no disastrous forfeiture.

The Lord Jesus, the second man, having fulfilled all the conditions which devolved on Him as the Surety of those whom the Father had given Him, conveys to each of them a supply of the

Holy Spirit irrevocably sure and indefectible. The ground of that supply is that the second Adam stood; and in consequence of His finished work, they who are effectually united to Him shall never finally forfeit the Spirit's communications. While many grounds and reasons may be mentioned why Christ's disciples never fall away, the principal ground, based at once on divine law and justice, is that the second Adam, by fulfilling the conditions, and complying with all the requirements of the law, received as His reward an inexhaustible supply of the Spirit, which should be imparted to all His people, and dwell in them for ever. The

201

Spirit, accordingly, never permits them finally to depart. He will not abandon the souls which He has regenerated, and which He will use effectual means to reclaim when they are ready, from inward feebleness or listless indifference, to vacillate or waver. He will not suffer them to depart for ever, but will renew the exercises of repentance and faith so that they will return to their allegiance (Isa 59.21), and continue to have the place of sons in the family of God. The great work of the Spirit, with a view to adoption, is union to Christ, which in an objective point of view constitutes them the sons of God.

According to semi-Pelagian theories, the first good begins with the man, and the Spirit of God is only a benevolent well-wisher, but no Spirit of life in Christ Jesus. The real deed, and not the vague desire, begins on man's side, though he is described as "*dead in sin*." The grand evil of all these systems is, that they insert a legal condition which men have to perform, and all ends at last in the law of works, leaving men to apply to themselves as they best may the benefits which the Redeemer purchased. Humanity is thrown back, under a goodly guise, upon the principle — DO AND LIVE, And whether it be the influence of hope or fear, whatever imposes on man an obligation to act from himself as the principle of action, is legal in its inmost germ, and enmity to God — however concealed under an ostentatious attachment to grace in a one-sided way. In these systems the gift of salvation is *not given to the man*, but to his strenuous self-application. But if the application in the last instance rests on man's inherent power, he inevitably relies on his reliance, or believes in his belief; and no exercise of ingenuity can extricate him from the vortex of legalism. So much was Luther persuaded of the legalism of all this, that in his treatise on the Bondage of the Will, in answer to Erasmus, his whole reasoning assumes that it is a mockery to present the finished work of Christ to men who are taught that they possess inherent power, as this undermines the whole.

202

The full development of these systems appears in preaching A DEAD FAITH. And their naturalistic tendency expresses 'itself in the assertion that they do not know a wrong faith, and that there are not two ways of believing. On the contrary, the Bible speaks of a dead faith. The confessions of the Reformation, drawn from Scripture, delineate faith as a new religious principle of life, awakened by the Holy Spirit without man's active aid. It is an instructive fact that some of the old Lutheran divines, in their apprehension lest an element of works should be introduced into our title, objected at one time to the designation "living faith;" but it is said that not one now exists that does not solemnly abjure the error. And no reflecting mind can fail to see that faith must exist as an implanted habit, or grace of the Holy Spirit in apprehending the Saviour as our righteousness; and very evidently it never does or can exist without thus apprehending Christ. Hence in all the systems above delineated, in harmony with the dead faith which is propounded, there is uniformly a painful want of reference to the personal Redeemer. They allude to an object in the past ill formal contrast with a present object; they preach a salvation in abstract separation from His Person, and as little connected with Him as if He had

never risen. Calvin says: Such a separation of Christ from His Spirit makes Him like a dead image or corpse.¹

That man owes his entire renovation to the effectual operation of the Holy Spirit, is evident enough from what has been already said. Any synergism or co-operation on man's side in the first instance 'would necessarily presuppose the existence of powers and faculties in order to that co-operation. But in the explicit statements of Scripture man is represented as impotent, nay, dead in trespasses and sins (Eph 2.1); thus rendering co-operative action toward his own resuscitation impossible, and only an absurd idea.

203

On the contrary, the Scripture emphatically describes the divine action of the Spirit as working in us to will and to do (Phi 2.13). But whether *He works in us to will*, or subsequently works *with us* when we are enabled to will, the entire glory of regeneration and of conversion belongs to the Spirit of God. There is no middle ground, no intermediate stage between death and life, between conversion and non-conversion; for the origin of spiritual life must be instantaneous. It is compared to creation (Psa 51.10; Eph 2.10); it is compared to resurrection (Eph 1.19). The man who is the subject of the change is the party on whom creative omnipotence acts, to the exclusion of all mental preparations on man's side — for he is only receptive — and all merits of congruity of every description.

¹ On Rom 8.10, Calvin says: "Christum a spiritu suo qui divellunt, eum faciunt mortuo simulacro vel cadaueri similem."

204

LECTURE V. ON THE SPIRIT OF HOLINESS.

Our last lecture we discussed the Spirit's work on the individual, with special reference to the way and mode of His return to the human heart and to the application of redemption. By way of transition to the topic which will now occupy attention, let me recall the inseparable connection between the work of Christ FOR US and the work of the Spirit IN US — a connection which it is of the utmost moment for sound theology as well as practical religion habitually to apprehend. It is a connection of cause and effect, or of merit and reward. It is in express terms set forth in such passages as the sixth, seventh, and eighth chapters of the Epistle to the Romans, where, in every variety of form, the apostle declares that the link between the justification of the man and the sanctification of his nature is of a kind as close and inseparable as that by which God connected Christ's atoning death and His resurrection to a premial life. The link between the two is secured not by the mere force of gratitude or by the influence of truth, but by something immeasurably more powerful, and which touches the deepest foundations of the divine government — viz. by the righteous restoration of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus (Rom 8.2). There cannot be the application of redemption in the way of pardon and acceptance without the accompanying Spirit of holiness.

Here we must advert to THE PART WHICH CHRIST ACTS IN GIVING THE SPIRIT. In all Protestant theology, Lutheran and

205

Reformed, there is a general consent that Christ is the acting life-communicating head by His Spirit. It is not Christ without the Spirit, nor the Spirit without Christ. His mediatorial function was not limited to His earthly life. Nor is it something outward, which every man is left to appropriate to himself. The whole application of redemption is not to be regarded merely as man dealing with God, but rather as the action of the God-man, in His capacity as His people's representative dealing with the Father, and the Father dealing with the Son, according to the counsel of peace between them both, with a view to man's acceptance. And the participation of saving blessings is through the power of the Spirit. The exalted Saviour has this in view in the entire exercise of His priestly functions towards God, as well as of His kingly office towards men. It is not man's will, which is weak and changeable, but the effectual will of the God-man, which is to be regarded as the turning-point or hinge. And though He employs His Holy Spirit according to the economic order in the Godhead, it is by His direct act as Head that He attaches to Himself His members, and calls them into fellowship or joint participation with Himself. They are apprehended by Christ Jesus (Phil 3.12).

The FAITH by which the application of His merits is instrumentally conveyed is itself the gift of Christ, exalted as a Prince and Saviour, to give the blessings of His purchase, to incorporate the living members into vital union with Himself, and to work effectually in His people by the efficacy of His Spirit through the word and in the whole ministerial commission.

We wish, for the sake of non-theological readers, to refer to this point — viz. the reproduction of Christ's spiritual life in His people. As Adam's life is reproduced in the entire human family with all its alienation from the life of God, and with the organic ruin of their whole nature, so the new life of the God-man flows over to all His people.

206

The natural birth connects us with the first man, and renews his life. The new birth connects us with the second man, who, by the Holy Spirit, gathers His people under Him by a self-communicating act. I am the more desirous to give a due place to this great truth, because it has been less developed within the last century than in the previous periods. The last Adam is a

quickening Spirit (1Cor 15.45). That life is in the Son, who, by the Spirit, apprehends the whole man in all his faculties; and the renewing process will be completed even on his body at the resurrection day. Every believer, though not directly conscious of connection with the first man, is, or ought to be, permanently conscious of his union to the second Adam, who is our life.

The Spirit's work was specially intended to form a MYSTIC UNION with Christ for the application of redemption, and for the INHABITATION of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus (Rom 8.2). I need not refer in detail to the several figures or similitudes under which that union is exhibited in Scripture as a potential reality (2Cor 11.2; Eph 4.16; John 15.1-6; Eph 2.20). These various figures taken from marriage, from the union of the human body with the Head, from the vine and branches, from the temple and the cornerstone, are intended to set forth a real and intimate connection, and to show that the inmost soul of the redeemed is reserved for Christ's inhabitation by the Spirit, who thus becomes the life of their life, the soul of their soul, in a sense to which any other known union makes no approximation. The Spirit is the bond of union on Christ's side, and faith, produced by the Spirit of faith, is the bond on our side; and when that union is effected, the soul, like the fruitful branch of the vine, brings forth abundant fruit.

As to the union, in reference to which it is said by the apostle: "He that is joined to the Lord is one Spirit" (1Cor 6.17), the results that immediately flow from it are so extensive and so powerful, for the supply of the covenant blessings,

207

that Christ's Spirit becomes theirs, His holiness their holiness, His joy their joy. Such is the Spirit's efficacy, that there is not one thought, feeling, or emotion pervading the human bosom of the man Christ Jesus amid the glories of the upper sanctuary, but may be said to be renewed and reproduced in the experience of His people, perfectly in the bliss above, incipiently in their present dwelling-place below. So real is the union through the Spirit, and so deep the sympathy reciprocally exercised between the ever-living Head in heaven and the spiritual body which He has united to Himself, that, on the one hand, every want, necessity, and sorrow under which His people groan vibrates to Him like the touching of a chord, of which He is instantly aware; while, on the other hand, an injury offered to His cause awakens in them such a sense of oneness and of conscious identification with His interests and honour as constrains them to say: "Rivers of water run down my eyes, because they keep not Thy law" (Psa 119.136). By the Spirit our whole person is united to His whole Person. And the bond of union depends not, as Romanists and Ritualists allege, on bodily contact or local nearness, but on faith, by means of which we are one with Him; for Christ does not come down corporeally from heaven for the accomplishment of any of the objects contemplated by that union in this our earthly pilgrimage.

Whether the elect of God were already united to Christ before the actual exercise of faith, was a point keenly debated in England two centuries ago between the followers of Crisp, who affirmed it, and their opponents, led by Dr. D. Williams, who denied it. As the exaggerated terms in which the former spoke of eternal justification caused suspicion and alarm, Witsius, the celebrated Dutch divine, prepared his admirable *írenicum* to bring the parties together.¹

208

The solution which he gave of the controverted point was contained in the distinction that the saints were in Christ by a federal and legal union before the foundation of the world, but that the actual union — called the mystical or vital union — takes place only WHEN THE HOLY SPIRIT UNITES THEM: to the Son of God. From that moment, they who are united to the Lord Jesus by one Spirit obtain a true and actual participation in all that He procured by His obedience unto death. If Christ satisfied divine justice, they who are united to Him by faith have also satisfied it.

¹ Vid. Witsius, *Animadversiones Irenicae ad Controversias quasdam Anglicanas*, Leyden 1700.

When Christ overcame, they overcame; when Christ received perfect acceptance as the Surety, they received the same acceptance in and with Him. And, on the other hand, as Christ obtained a resurrection-life, a life of holiness and joy at God's right hand for ever, they, too, who are found in Him, have an incipient life of the same nature, a life hid with Christ in God (Col 3.3).

This brings us to the great truth, frequently affirmed and repeated in Scripture — THE INHABITATION OF THE SPIRIT in all true believers. The passages are very numerous which teach this great doctrine. Thus Christ, in promising the Comforter, who should abide with His disciples for ever, added, by way of contrasting the world and them: "I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever — the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; *for He dwelleth with you and shall be in you*" (Joh 14.16). The Apostle Paul, in writing to Timothy, says: "That good thing which was committed to thee keep by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us" (2Tim 1.14). I shall notice, further, the passages where the Christian is called the temple of the Holy Ghost: "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that *the Spirit of God dwelleth in you*" (1Cor 3.16). "Know ye not that your body is *the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you*, which ye have of God" (1Cor 6.19). We may compare other similar passages (2Cor. 6.16; Eph 2.22). In all

209

these passages the Holy Spirit who dwells in Christ, and who is given to inhabit His people, is said to occupy the Christian's heart as His temple, not by a mere inactive presence, but as animating and pervading all the faculties and powers of the human mind.

The regenerate man, accordingly, is said to HAVE THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST. The expression is used by the apostle in the Epistle to the Romans in two connected clauses in such a way as implies an inhabitation on the part of the Holy Spirit, and a consequent possession on our side as a graciously imparted privilege: "But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God *dwell in you*. Now, if any man HAVE NOT THE SPIRIT of Christ, he is none of His" (Rom 8.9). To HAVE THE SPIRIT, then, is inseparably connected with the inhabitation of the Spirit. We are thus said to "have" the Spirit as the consequence of His effectual inhabitation, and by a renewing and transforming principle of life, which constantly operates in the most active manner. And we are conscious of having so great a guest, because He condescends to occupy the soul in all its faculties.

It may be proper at this stage to obviate a common misinterpretation, which tends to evacuate the phrases in the passages to which we have referred of their full significance. From a speculative reluctance to accept the idea of the Spirit's personal inhabitation, sometimes in one interest and at other times in another, many interpreters, scholastic as well as Protestant, expounded the allusions to the indwelling of the Spirit as referring only to the gifts which He confers.

That is an arbitrary exposition on the part of the interpreter for which no good ground can be assigned. When the allusion is to gifts conferred — except in the case of temporary disciples like Judas — we must rather say that the personal Holy Spirit was given along with the gifts which were bestowed. He did not produce them as an absent regulator of their distribution, but as a present inhabitant. Nay, we may affirm that a person works only where he is; and it was only as inhabiting the hearts of believers that He imparted either the sanctifying gifts or the ministerial gifts.

210

As this inhabitation is associated with the active exercise of divine power, it may be further noticed that it underlies all the Christian's holiness and growth, all his conformity to the divine image and final perseverance. It is the peculiar feature of every system that takes this truth in

earnest, to bring out the essential difference between grace and nature, to vindicate the spiritual life as a new creation, to assert its actual reality, its peculiar organs, its habitual graces implanted — with the several actings, experiences, wants, and appetences which belong to it, as a distinct existence, but never separated from the living Head. To the neglect of this inhabitation of the Spirit must be ascribed much of the naturalism of the modern theology, which ascribes the graces of the Spirit only to the ordinary exercises of the mind as it unfolds itself in joy or sorrow, in faith or love, on a spiritual object; and they lose sight of the fact that the indwelling Spirit, filling and animating the renewed mental faculties, calls these graces into action over the ruins of the opposite corruption. On the contrary, the schools of theology which do justice to the great fact of the Spirit's inhabitation, such as the true followers of Augustin and the Puritans, were happily exempt from that humanistic theology. They contended not only for Christ's abiding presence in every spiritual act (Joh 15.5), but for the real implantation of the graces of the Spirit as well as for the impossibility of putting them in motion without His heavenly help.

The most eminent Lutheran divines, in the brightest period of their theology — Luther, Chemnitzius, and the like — were wont to teach that the inhabitation of the Spirit consisted in two things: IN THE SPIRIT'S PRESENCE AND OPERATION, or, in a single phrase, in gracious presence. They were accustomed also to distinguish the modes of the divine presence in this fourfold way: *first*, a universal presence over

211

all the wide realms of creation for the conservation of all things; secondly, a special sanctifying presence, whereby the Spirit abides in true Christians, and inhabits them continually through life and in death, till they fully enjoy the beatific vision; thirdly, the personal union of the Son of God, whereby He assumed humanity with all that the assumption carried with it, and replenished that humanity with His indwelling presence; fourthly, the presence of the Spirit in glorified saints, whereby He not only fills the heart with all the communications of His grace, but leads them to behold God's face in righteousness, and to be satisfied when they awake with His likeness.

The Spirit's work, as the great inhabitant of the regenerate heart, appears in continually sanctifying all the mental powers; and a marked line of distinction must be drawn between THE PREVENIENT GRACE OF THE SPIRIT and His CO-OPERATING GRACE. The former belongs to effectual calling, regeneration, conversion, and faith, in which the man with all his powers is the object in whom the Spirit operates by the word; the latter belongs to His progressive sanctification, in which the Spirit calls into exercise the new powers of the renewed mind, and where there are no immediate actings of the Spirit superseding that co-operation: for who can see without an eye, or hear without an ear? The Holy Spirit does not move the hearts of regenerate men by mere power, but on another principle. He moves them by THOSE SPIRITUAL POWERS or graces with which they are now provided. The Spirit which is in Christ without measure, is in them by measure as a Spirit of life, not moving the mind as a stone, or as a wheel, by mere power, but according to the new nature which has been created and formed in it. To lose sight of this is to ignore the fact that Christ is the source of the Spirit of life, and that the Christian has to add to his faith virtue, and to virtue knowledge, and all the various excellences which are perfect in Christ Jesus (2Pet 1.5). Hence, they who are renewed

212

after their Lord's image have, according to their measure, a certain spiritual power, a certain law of their mind, the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus, which enables them to overcome and triumph in their Lord (Rom 8.2).

The practical neglect of this distinction may sometimes be traced in Church history and on whole generations of men. The Lutherans, for example, though they spoke much and admirably

of grace and liberty, were too easily satisfied that the good tree, by the inevitable law of its existence, would bring forth its fruit. They neglected the due cultivation of the graces of the Spirit in the new creature. On the contrary, the Puritans pruned and cultivated the good tree with unwearied diligence, and made every Christian grace, after scriptural example, the subject of wholesome exhortation.

I have been led, by various considerations, to attempt a very brief discussion, in connection with the inhabitation of the Spirit, of the whole subject of CHRISTIAN ETHICS. It is never safe to leave this department a blank in theological study, or to hand it over, as is commonly done, to the cold region of moral philosophy, as if it were unworthy of special cultivation. The Church is never safe without an independent study of Christian ethics based on union to Christ, and deduced from the renewing grace and inhabitation of the Spirit. The position I lay down is, that Christian ethics, while occupying a well-understood relation to philosophic morals, are vitally connected with the inhabitation and renovation of the Holy Spirit, and that they have their own peculiar principle, and produce their own independent results.

I said Christian ethics have a well-understood relation to philosophic morals. When it is asked, What is that relation? We answer, one point may be safely postulated. They cannot contradict each other in their ultimate decisions. If they could be supposed to contradict each other, this would involve the startling result that there are two moralities, one of nature, and another from the Spirit of life;

213

in other words, that natural religion in its ethical rules held that to be duty which revealed religion condemned as sinful or unwarrantable. Such a collision cannot be. It is true they start from totally different principles, and move in totally different spheres. But in their ultimate results they can involve no mutual contradiction.

But it may be asked, Is not one of them superfluous? May we not take from some of the systems the whole frame-work and nomenclature, and content ourselves with the simple task of replenishing these with a new spirit or higher life? Letting the mould remain, may we not pour into it a new life? In some such way those must have argued who adopted with satisfaction the maxim that philosophy is the handmaid of theology, forgetting that this is the certain way for her becoming mistress. We may take an illustration from Aquinas. Aware that there is a point of contact between the Christian ethics and the systems of antiquity, and unwilling to regard as fruitless the imposing outline which Aristotle bequeathed, he would superinduce the Christian on the classical, or put the new wine into the old bottles. He would take the four cardinal virtues as comprehending all that is purely human, and only supplement them by the 'So-called theological virtues, faith, hope, and love, along with the seven graces of the Spirit. Had he put the two systems — the philosophical and the Christian — in juxtaposition as shadow and reality, as law and grace, as nature's deep sigh after an unrealized ideal, and the realization which the Holy Spirit confers, it might have been an interesting as well as useful outline. But, as it was, the result was to the injury of both. Similar illustrations may be drawn from any period of the Protestant Church, where we find Christian ethics poured into the mould supplied by the systems of benevolence or of the moral sense.

Are they never to run into one, even in the last problem awaiting the earth, when reason and revelation shall sweetly coalesce?

214

I answer, philosophic morals belong to us as reasonable beings: Christian ethics belong to us as redeemed men. Melancthon, who may be named along with Butler as one of the greatest "ethical writers of the Protestant Church, happily said: "Moral philosophy is that part of the divine law which treats of external actions." If we accept this definition, which may be frankly

done, philosophic morals differ from Christian ethics as law from grace, demand from obedience, shadow from substance. We cannot speak of two moralities. Christianity is not, according to the Unitarian interpretation of the Sermon on the Mount, a new and stricter law. It has not come to usher in a different ethics, but to make the preceptive “thou shalt” an attained reality by renewing man’s nature, and shedding on him a transforming power, which shall ennoble and elevate all his faculties and all his relations.

Christian ethics have their own peculiar source, and produce their own independent results. The entire subject must be placed in immediate connection with the Spirit of Christ. It is this connection with the Spirit which ensures to Christian morals their proper independence, and their cultivation as a department of theology. When we reach this point of view, it is no more with abstract ethical laws that we have to deal, nor a mere ideal that we have to contemplate. A realized ideal of ethics stands before us in the human life of Christ — into which we are engrafted by the Holy Spirit in the nearest conceivable way.

From this view of Christian ethics we can look down on the faulty and ineffectual systems that have been presented to the minds of men. It has been customary, in some quarters, to consider Christian ethics as produced by the mere force of motives operating on those who are the subjects of redemption. Nor is that influence to be repudiated; for it is a half truth. It has been common among others to restrict the matter to a catalogue of rules, or to a doctrine of duties.

215

Nor is that to be forgotten or despised. But Christian ethics occupy a much more close connection with the Spirit as uniting us to Christ. We come to a point, whenever we touch the resurrection-life, where precept and fulfilment may be viewed as one. If the subject presupposed in all the exercises and precepts comprehended in Christian ethics is the risen Christian — if nothing is enjoined but what may be developed from his spiritual life, and it is thus that the apostolic Epistles always put the matter — then it is not mere self-acting motives, not a mere doctrine of duties, but something more intimately connected with the divine Redeemer, that is the principle of Christian ethics. That principle is the risen life through the Spirit of life.

To place the relation of Christian ethics to the personal Christ in its true light, I shall notice the modifications which the entire subject undergoes, according to the conception which men entertain of Christ’s Person. A brief survey of this point will show in what close connection they stand to His Person. Greatly should we err were we to suppose that any view of Christ’s Person would equally avail for the production of Christian ethics. It is the more important to notice this point, because it has often been said that it is well-nigh indifferent for this department whether the mind is attached to evangelical sentiments or the reverse. A cursory glance will immediately show the modifications of the whole subject according to the opinions entertained of Christ’s Person.

On the UNITARIAN VIEW of Christ’s Person, the inquirer comes at once to the conclusion that we have nothing in Christian ethics beyond what reason can give — a code of rules, a book of duties. It has been found that, among the Unitarians, there is an ethical system irrespective of Christ’s Person, and that there is nothing to prevent men from hoping to surpass Him in the use of means and aids furnished by the course of centuries.

216

On the PELAGIAN THEORY, which has no renewing work of the Holy Spirit, the effect on ethics is disastrous. Ethical laxity at once ensues. They who dispense with the Spirit’s aid to restore man to a position higher than his present imperfection, and who include in their view of grace nothing more than exhortations and moral suasion to faculties neither hurt by the fall nor incapable of good, have no high theory above their practice. And when the distinction between theory and practice is merged, the consequence is a lax and defective system of ethics.

On the ROMISH THEORY, which transmutes the gospel into a new law, the system of ethics never escapes from legal bondage, and is never ushered into liberty; for it discourages all assurance of salvation. So long as men are exhorted to merit salvation, pride — the inmost sin of the human heart — never can be destroyed. While attention is limited to single sins, to the neglect of the sinful nature, men have no humbling discovery of sin; and thus their whole ethical system oscillates between bondage and spiritual pride.

The Biblical principle of justification by faith alone affects, to its utmost limits, the whole dominion of Christian ethics. One broad position characterizes scriptural Protestantism. Ethical action is not pursued to merit salvation, but because the man is saved by grace; or, to adopt the Biblical representation, it is the good tree that yields the good fruits; while the fruits cannot prevail to change the tree. The notion that ethical action goes before acceptance, and with a view to secure it, vitiates the entire character of the action. Christian ethics, on the contrary, are the fruits, results, and evidences of the salvation. In this all the Protestant Churches are at one, having the liberty of grace, and dependence on the Holy Spirit.

I have adduced these illustrations from various systems to show that Christian ethics lean on the Person of Christ, and are an emanation from the law of the Spirit of life in Christ

217

Jesus (Rom 8.2). They are the effect or issue of living in communion with Christ through the power of the Holy Spirit, or they are the mode of acting to which that communion gives rise. When the Christian dwells in communion, the practice of the virtues is in consequence of the Spirit's operations, not so much an arduous effort as the natural expression of his life. It is his nature, his life to practise them. All those single graces and virtues given with the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus (Rom 8.2) only wait to be called into action; and that communion with Him who is the life lends the motive power in most cases without an effort. The passive and effortless facility with which the Christian practises many of the virtues is often strikingly exposed by Luther.

But this does not supersede exhortation in any case. The possibility of practising the Christian graces, while presupposed and assumed in the whole domain of the Christian life as a life in the Spirit, does not preclude earnest admonition (Gal 5.25). It is taken for granted that they are possible, nay, easy, and that the living Christian, risen with his Lord, is in a position to exhibit them; and Scripture, accordingly, when inculcating the practice of the graces, only touches some secret spring that has power to evoke them. Whether we look at the Sermon on the Mount, where various graces are enforced, from the deepest relations of the kingdom of God, of which Christ is the centre; — or at the grace of humility, enforced by the consideration that He who was in the form of God humbled Himself (Phi 2.3-7); or at the grace of liberality, commended by the motive that He who was rich became poor — we find the same peculiarity. Christian ethics are never isolated from Christ and the deep relations of His kingdom.

There are only two other points, in speaking of Christian ethics, called into action by the Holy Spirit, viz.: that every thing is viewed in relation to God, and that love is made the principle of ethical unity.

218

1. The grand peculiarity of Christian ethics is, that in the entire range of this department nothing is to be isolated from God. As we know Him who is Light, and Love, and Spirit — as all is from God in the power of the Spirit, and to God under the influence of the same Spirit, nothing is to be done but in connection with the divine. In the Person of Jesus we see the divine replenishing the human. And His followers, in like manner, in proportion as they drink into the same Spirit with Him, ennoble and glorify the scenes of earthly life by the divine Spirit derived from Him. While the sphere of Christian ethics is so closely connected with the divine — that is, from God and to God — it must be added that every earthly relationship, and every scene in these

relationships, must be made a vessel to contain and diffuse the heavenly treasure. Hence the lives of the early Christians shone with an unearthly beauty which attracted all eyes. The moral glory of their life, their purity and happy love, their self-denial and benevolence, reflected from the surrounding vice and moral lassitude of heathenism, shone like a vision from another sphere. By the renewing Spirit the divine was brought within the circle of the human.

2. In the Christian ethics LOVE is the principle of unity: The philosophic morals, however much they might struggle toward general principles, could not advance to the ethical unity of love; and no system, uninfluenced by Christianity, ever dreamt of it. This draws the line between Christianity and all other ethics in ancient or modern times. That the unity of ethical life is love, may be proved from the nature of love, which unites the mind to the object, which is the very result to which all the operations of the Spirit conspire. The Lord and His apostles teach that the various virtues and graces of the Spirit are not so much separate qualities, but diversified forms, modifications, and applications of the same thing which the Spirit produces as the principle of ethical unity. Paul, in his exhaustive delineation of the one diffusive principle of love,

219

describes the fundamental Christian virtues as all reducible to love (1Cor 13.). He who has love, accordingly, has all the virtues. The cardinal virtues, the distribution of which was well and happily given in the ethics of antiquity — wisdom, temperance, fortitude, and justice — are only love as directive, as self-controlling, as militant, as attentive to the rights of others; and as love gradually advances, one of these may be at one time in greater prominence and another at another. But they are only diversified forms of ethical unity of love.

We have now to notice the growing sanctification produced by the Spirit, or the increasing conformity to the divine image. That which enables Christianity to achieve what human speculation fails to accomplish, is the fact that it is a life derived from the Spirit of life — not an idea, truth, or opinion — and that as such it cannot but grow. In all systems that are of the earth, we have mere ideas which are as jejune and impotent as their propounders; whereas the last Adam is A QUICKENING SPIRIT. Whenever Christ is considered as a present fountain of life, and Christianity as opening the way for the Spirit of life, it is essentially distinct from the mere influence of philosophical speculation. For where a new element of life is introduced into fallen humanity, and nature is not left to be wrought upon by a mere idea or a system of thought, but animated from within by the Spirit of Him who says: “I am the life,” humanity is in connection with the great archetype to whose image we are predestinated to be conformed. This life is in the Son, who apprehends the whole man in all His faculties; all His people are included in Him as one man; and though their individual personality is not destroyed, they are included in the second Adam as they were in the first. In the figure of the vine, employed to explain this mystery, we are taught that as the vine diffuses life through numberless branches distinct from one another but not separate from the stem,

220

so none of His people can for a moment be independent or isolated from the Spirit of life. On the contrary, they are conscious of a union to Him who is our life, and who awakens every spiritual desire in His people to such a degree that He says: “Without me ye can do nothing.”

Nor do the Spirit’s subjective operations in any measure destroy man’s freedom, though many theological systems urge the plea of freedom to exclude the Spirit of God from the heart. But if the taint of the fall has not destroyed the essence of the soul, though infecting all its powers, it is capable of separation without prejudice to its freedom. No more does this put man’s freedom in jeopardy, than the cures which Christ of old performed on men’s bodies — the analogy being precisely similar. But those objections which are based on the plea of freedom proceed on an entire oblivion of the disturbing element of the fall. There is, in reality, no interference with

man's freedom when the renewing and sanctifying work of the Spirit commences and advances, though it involves all that is implied in a birth to which the man himself does not at all contribute — in a new creation which argues almighty power — and in a rising from the dead, which involves an energy wholly from without. The subjective operations of the Spirit no more interfere with man's freedom than the objective work of the Son.

Two misleading influences run counter to the active prosecution of progressive sanctification in the Spirit. Some regard sanctification as occupying the subordinate place of furnishing but an evidence of our salvation. They consider that Scripture, in enforcing sanctification of the Spirit, means little more than to supply an evidence that we are justified by faith. It is thus made a mere means to an end, whereas it is everywhere inculcated in Scripture as the express command of God (1Pet 1.16; 1Thes 4.3). Another tendency, in a different quarter, is to regard sanctification in the Spirit as something necessarily developed of its own accord, without any exercise of the will. But Scripture allows no quarter for Quietism in any of its forms.

221

While the actual possession of the Spirit of life is always presupposed, and the Christian in the pursuit of sanctification is always reminded to reckon himself as dead indeed to sin, and alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord (Rom 6.11) — in other words, as distinctly appreciating the specially meritorious ground of acceptance with the Moral Governor as well as the Person of the risen Christ, the source of all spiritual life and influence — the Scriptures do not refrain from adducing motives. They touch many motives. Thus they adduce all the motives drawn from the threefold department of liberty, love, and spirituality (Gal 5.13-26), from the fear of God (Phi 2.12), and from reward (Mat 10. 42).

The obvious distinction between philosophic morals and Christian sanctification is, that the former commonly endeavour to produce their results by a single dominating principle, whereas the latter wields many various motives. We have only to recall any of the systems of antiquity or of modern times to perceive this marked distinction. The enumeration of the distinctive principle which the several systems avowed will suffice to show this. The principle of Plato — conformity to the divine image by idea — was a sort of unconscious anticipation of what was to come, but which there were no powers to effect in the classical world, apart from that life in the Spirit which was to revolutionize the human heart from within over all its bounds. That system, which may be called nature's dumb unuttered sigh for something higher, which the grace of the Holy Spirit alone could usher in, found in Christianity a realization — a spiritual and ethical conformity to the divine image in all the relations of earthly life — which was never dreamed of by its first propounder. The principle of another philosophic system, that of happiness as the chief good, mental repose, was a sort of sigh for that peace of mind and positive enjoyment of God which Christianity alone affords.

222

The principle of another system, that of a life agreeable to nature, or the Stoical principle, which assumed that man continued in a nature pure and undisturbed, found its realization in Him who showed the full harmony of man with His nature, and who renews us after His image. The principle of another system, the royal mean between two extremes, which Aristotle applied to civil virtue in the relations of state-life, are realized in Christian ethics when we rise to the higher relations of the kingdom of God. The modern systems in like manner, whether we call up to view those which are known as the systems of benevolence or of the moral sense, correctly enough make the moral problem, or the chief end of man, the starting-point of their philosophy, and propose a single principle as a lever to move this human life. But they only evince a partiality in favour of a single element or influence, if it could be set in motion. And when it is asked in certain places, What can Christianity do more? — the answer is, it is the realization of all that

these systems, as the deep sigh of nature, longed to realize, but failed to call into play. Christianity was the counterpart of that which nature sighed for, but could not produce. The truth anticipated in a mere vague expectation here found its truth, completeness, and reality. But what the gospel furnishes is not ONE principle, but many. The new life of the Spirit, indeed, is one, and a principle unknown to philosophic morals. But the motives which are touched and evoked are manifold and numerous.

Closely connected with this line of thought, the whole subject of the Redeemer's character, as the perfect exhibition of a divine ideal, comes under our consideration. And we are changed into the same image as by the Spirit of the Lord when we behold it (2Cor 3.18). The character of Christ as the loftiest ideal, the realized standard of human excellence, and the only exhibition of that image of God in which man was made, and to which he is predestinated to be conformed,

223

is meant to be in the constant view of the Church as sketched by the pen of inspiration. All that can be done is to touch those springs which recall the reality, and which is to be surveyed and pondered with the earnest prayer that the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of the Lord Jesus may open the eyes of our understanding (Eph 1.17). Owen, in his great work on the Person of Christ, well remarks: "Some men speak much of the imitation of Christ, and following of His example; and it were well if we could see more of it really in effect. But no man shall ever become like unto Him by bare imitation of His actions, without that view or intuition of His glory, which alone is accompanied with a transforming power to change them into the same image."

The character of Christ, thus seen through the word and by the illumination of the Spirit, impresses every mind that gazes on it with a sense of full-orbed completeness and perfection. But it is of a kind so new and unprecedented, that minds devoid of the Spirit are insensible to the glory of it. Let me here bring out more particularly one or two of the distinguishing features of Christ's moral perfection.

The foundation of all lay in His humility. He laboured not to rise aloft; He was the meek and lowly One. His public was not what men thought, or mere public opinion, but the eye of an omnipresent Father, before whom all human distinctions are of no account. This humility, which has been made the true foundation of all Christian ethics, found vent in the Lord's history in a renunciation of His own will, in a retreat from worldly honour, and in the words: "I am among you as one that serveth." As President Edwards has well remarked: "Christ, though He was the most excellent and honourable, yet was the most humble; yea, He was the most humble of all creatures."

Christ's moral eminence was there before any of His works were done. The latter only revealed Him and discovered what He was.

224

But these manifestations of spiritual excellence bring before us One who, in the possession of the full supply of the Spirit, shows a full completeness and perfect equipoise of all the graces. Unlike every other human life, where the excellences and defects are nearly balanced, all graces were found, and all perfect. One grace did not displace another, nor overshadow another. There was such a harmony of all the gifts and graces of the Spirit, that the exercise of one did not limit or interfere with the full energy of all the rest. He discharged the various duties of the family, and evinced to the last hour the most tender love and filial regard.

And the simple principle which regulated that whole marvellous life was obedience to His Father's will: "My meat is to do the will of Him that sent me, and to finish His work" (Joh 4.34). It was an unvarying obedience at every moment to the living Lawgiver pervading all the steps of

life; and without an unconditional subjection to His Father's will, He never spent a moment. His whole obedience was founded in faith and love.

The superiority of a living example to mere precept is proverbial. And duly to affect the minds of men, the moral code required to be embodied in a life which should engage all eyes and win all hearts. What was said by Plato, that if perfect virtue appeared among men, as a stranger from another sphere, all men would fall down and worship her, was not realized in the sense in which he expressed the anticipation — for perfect virtue did appear, only to be despised and rejected — but it is verified in the case of all whose minds have, by the regenerating grace of the Spirit, become susceptible of impressions from that high and ennobling standard. The human life of the God-man stands before us as a pure emanation of humility, obedience, and love; as an imperishable treasure, and an ideal to be reproduced in us.

225

And, unlike all merely human histories, that example has the peculiarity attaching to it, that in proportion as it is beheld and contemplated in the light of the Holy Spirit opening the eyes of our understanding, it exercises a sanctifying power beyond all other influences. It forms in us through faith the very image of God, which we behold in Him (2Cor 4.6). This is a creative example, infinitely meritorious as a procuring cause, and divinely efficacious in producing transforming results on the believing and adoring mind. It is an ideal which reproduces itself in the experience of the enlightened saint. His example becomes, in the Spirit's hand, when duly used, a plastic power, whereby we are changed into the same image. It is not., a cold, distant example to which we stand in no living relation, and frowning upon us from an unapproachable elevation: it is the achievement of a forerunner whom we follow, the attainment of the first-born among many brethren to whom we are predestinated to be conformed. It embraces all life; it is an example in solitude and society, in joy and sorrow, in poverty and the loss of friends, in suffering and death. And there it is to shine on our path, to elevate and transform us to what He was.

The spiritual perception of divine things is invariably accompanied with a sanctifying influence; and knowledge is no further genuine or spiritual than as it leads to this result. When it is a mere natural and intellectual perception of divine things, the mind is only elated (1Cor 8.2), not imbued with the humility which is the effect of all true spiritual knowledge. When it is a perception which takes its rise from the Holy Spirit, and is kindled by the contemplation of the divine perfections, excellence, and glory, the taste is so changed that it is separated from the pleasures of sin. They who have a spiritual perception of the divine beauty are drawn by a high attraction, and easily induced to forego, not only the sins, but the pleasures, emoluments, and distinctions which absorb men's present thoughts. The knowledge of God, taught by the Spirit, is invariably connected with a new spiritual relish, or a new sense,

226

which inclines the mind to rest in God as better than the creature, to regard sin as repulsive, and holiness as the element in which the mind delights to dwell. The heart is weaned by the revelation of the surpassing excellence of God, and so drawn by the cords of a man, by bands of love, that the supreme God is not only accepted as its portion, but enthroned as its Lord, to whom every power must be subjected, and who is nearer and dearer than self.

Thus far we have followed the operations of the Spirit of Holiness, and traced His work of sanctification, which is, on the one hand, a blessing unconditionally promised in the covenant of grace (Eze 36.27), and, on the other hand, a commanded duty according to the will of God (1Thes 4.3). When we inquire what attainment is possible, or what progress is actually made, it appears at once how far men are, for the most part, from attaining the highest degree of sanctification. Except in the cases where young disciples, in the warmth of first love, are prone

to exaggerate their own measure of attainment, and the powers with which they think themselves invested, or to misconceive the strength and ramifications of the sin which lurks within them, Christians are commonly ready to acknowledge how far they are from having apprehended the great end or object for which they have been apprehended by Christ Jesus. Legal perfection there is not, and none will claim it. The evangelical attainment which the Scriptures hold up before the mind, and sometimes term perfection, consists only in the fact that they who have the perfect righteousness of Christ imputed to them are so largely occupied by Christ's Spirit, and so powerfully wrought upon by the Spirit's grace, that they have the first beginnings of a perfect obedience which will reach its full measure and degree in the celestial state. At present, it is more in aim and purpose and unfeigned sincerity than in performance. Even Paul had not attained, however much he forgot the things which were behind, and reached forth to those things which were before (Phi 3.13).

227

A peculiar phase of Christian experience has, in recent times, been presented to men's attention by those who are commonly known as the advocates of the higher life, or of the life of faith. They are in principle and sentiment very much allied to the mysticism of Madame Guion and the mediaeval mystics. Professor Upham, of America, is the representative of the class. They have given it to be understood, as their sort of watchword, that the Christian can in this life do the will of God without inward opposition, without the inner conflict, or at least without the consciousness of it. They, moreover, connect the entering into rest with certain subjective frames or phases of inward experience, instead of representing rest as connected with the acceptance of the Person, offices, and work of the one Mediator between God and man.

As much loose thinking and unsound doctrine are always disseminated when the Spirit's work within is made to eclipse or overshadow the Redeemer's finished work without, it may be useful to notice the points at which such a theory diverges from sound doctrine. These are two: (1) defective views of Christ's imputed righteousness; and (2) a misapprehension of a Christian's double being. Instead of extolling the surety-righteousness of the Lord Jesus, all Perfectionists speak only of what is infused. They call in an exaggerated, overweening estimate of their own sanctification, and depreciate the law-magnifying obedience of Christ as the Lord our righteousness. As to the double being of a Christian — consisting, as he does during this mortal life, of flesh and spirit — they do not make the necessary distinction, and involve themselves in painful confusion of thought.

That there is an inner conflict in the bosom of every Christian mind, is put beyond all doubt by the testimony of all the saints in every age. That there is a carnal mind (φρόνιμα σαρκός) even in the regenerate, is emphatically brought out by the Apostle Paul in describing his own experience in the latter part of the seventh chapter of the Epistle to the Romans (7.14-25).

228

Though Pelagians, Arminians, and Romanists oppose that interpretation, there can be no doubt, as Augustine and all the Reformers have conclusively proved, that the apostle in that passage refers to a conflict carried on in his own soul at the time when he penned the Epistle. And this plainly argues that he laid claim to no perfection of holiness within. There was an internal conflict between flesh and spirit — between an old and new nature. And the strange thing is, that in this conflict the powers and faculties of the Christian seem to be occupied at one time by the one, and at another time by the other. The same intellect, will, and affections come under different influences, like two conflicting armies occupying the ground, and in turn driven from the field. To the astonishment of the Christian himself, the mind and affections engaged in the exercise of holy love by the power of the Holy Spirit, may all of a sudden be turned away by some root of sin or strange law of association in the mental economy to the very opposite; and thus the

conflict continues to the end. We may compare it — though no analogy can exactly portray it — to one in a state of convalescence, where disease and health are struggling for the mastery, sometimes the one predominating, sometimes the other, till the disease is fully and for ever expelled from the veins.

The apostle draws a distinction, indeed, between his true and proper self and the sin that dwelt in him. But that was not intended to divest himself of responsibility, or to escape from repentance and confession. Rather it was to rise above the dejection of such a constant, unintermitting conflict. He describes a law of sin warring against the law of his mind, constraining the cry for help, as a captive cries, and a divine interposition which sets him free. This is a vivid picture of conflict, of defeat, and then of the Spirit's help given in answer to his cry for deliverance.

229

The delineation is given in such a way as proves that the flesh resists the Spirit. The resistance is felt whenever we put forth any spiritual activity, like the effort to move a palsied member or a wounded arm; for when it is passive there is no resistance. In like manner, any holy activity is met by opposition from the opposite conception.

This exposition will suffice to prove that while the Spirit of holiness is ever active, the measure of attainment is always imperfect and defective. While the Christian presses toward the mark, he is never perfect; nor does he ever reach a stage when there is no more conflict, and no performance of God's will without the consciousness of inward opposition.

LECTURE VI. THE WORK OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN THE CHURCH.

I SHALL direct attention in this lecture to the Spirit's work in the Church, first in founding it, and then in making its ordinances available to their true design.

The Church of Christ, in the days of His flesh, did not, properly speaking, exist, though His word had found entrance into individual souls. It was at Pentecost that the Lord, by the power of His Spirit, welded into a Church the souls on whom the word had exercised a saving efficacy. The Holy Spirit, at the commencement of what is called His "mission," collected the disciples into a living unity; and this great work of the Spirit is called the Church, the kingdom of God, the body of Christ, the temple of the Spirit, the habitation of God in the Spirit (Eph 2.22), a conquest from the kingdom of darkness and death. It rises, as a fabric, in all the majesty of its proportions, on the ruins of that empire of rebellion and sin which previously occupied the world. It forms a true city of refuge to all who desire to escape from the tyranny of the destroyer.

In the apostolic age, the idea of THE KINGDOM OF GOD, to which ample allusion is made in the prophets and in our Lord's parables, is less presented to our notice than the idea of THE CHURCH. Let me advert to the relation which Christ occupies to the Church as King and Head, and to the place which the Spirit fills in this living organism.

231

Here the mediatorial acts of Christ are not to be omitted from our consideration. Thus, in two sayings which may easily be harmonized, the Lord said: "It is expedient for you that I go away; for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you" (Joh 16.17); and again: "I will not leave you comfortless [better: orphans]; I will come to you" (Joh 14.18). The two things — the departure and coming — are there conjoined without disharmony or contradiction. The Lord departs, and yet comes; and the solution of that variety of statement is by no means difficult.

The influences of the Spirit on the Church are considered by many as emanating rather from the Spirit's proper motion than communicated by Christ, whose deputy He is, according to their economical relations. To obviate this one-sided representation, we have only to recall the Baptist's statement, taken up and repeated by the Lord Himself: "He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire" (Mat 3.11; Acts 1.5). This momentous truth, that Christ baptizes with the Holy Ghost — in other words, has authority to dispense the Spirit — is not to be obscured for the sake of another truth which may, if unduly urged, be made the occasion of introducing the notion of isolated action in the Godhead, than which it is hardly possible to imagine any view more replete with disastrous consequences. All the Persons act indivisibly in every divine act, according to their order in the Trinity.

An analogy may be traced between the baptism of Christ, by which He was inaugurated into office, and the effusion of the Spirit on the day of Pentecost, after He received the plenary unction of the Spirit (Act 2.33). In a word, these two events indicated two grades of unction, or two stages in the communication of the Spirit to Him. The former, accompanied with the descent of the Spirit, was meant to equip the Redeemer for entering on His office. The latter was intended to found the Christian Church and supply it with the living organs and various gifts, by which it efficiently exercises the spiritual life for the advancement of Christ's cause. The

232

Lord Jesus personally abstained from any step of His ministry till the Spirit descended upon Him, and John's baptism introduced Him to His work. The apostles, in like manner, tarried in Jerusalem, as the Lord directed them, till they were endued with power from on high. As a historic fact, the Christian Church came into existence only when the Spirit, by a miraculous effusion, was shed on the assembled multitude of disciples, and constituted them the Church of the Lord. The Twelve were honoured with a peculiar calling, for the execution of which the Spirit

furnished them with capacities and endowments. The Church came into being with the office-bearers, and was never without the offices and spiritual gifts.

With the rise of the Christian Church a new epoch dawned; new transforming influences entered into history. They who were called out of the mass of mankind by the sanctification of the Spirit (1Pet 1.2) were constituted THE CHURCH, a society of believers with a common interest in Christ's redemption and a common hope of glory. As a corporate society, they have communion with the Lord Jesus Christ in His saving blessings, and with all believers in the living Head, The Church, animated by His Holy Spirit, came into existence in virtue of the election of the Father, the redemption of the Son, and the regenerating grace of the Holy Spirit. How closely the Spirit is connected with that living organism — its functions, office-bearers, sacraments, gifts, and ordinances — will appear when we call to mind that He creates it by His life-giving agency, sustains and supports it in its functions, infuses life, unction, and ability for the exercises by which the members edify and comfort one another, and without whom it could neither exist nor cohere. By the Holy Spirit, every true member of the Church is consciously joined to the Head; and the several members are held together rather by inward than by outward bonds.

When we examine the description of the Church in

233

Scripture, we find the emphatic announcement that it is one body, and that one Spirit inhabits and animates it (Eph 4.4). The Church has a twofold function, neither side of which can be neglected. It is (1) a HOLY SOCIETY in the world, maintaining a state of separation from the world, meeting together for the worship of God, and walking according to His will for mutual edification as well as for God's declarative glory; it is (2) A MISSIONARY INSTITUTE, with a view to propagate or extend the gospel to them that are without. Let us briefly look at both.

I. With regard to the Church as A HOLY SOCIETY meeting for worship and edification, the Epistles are replete with allusions to this feature. Thus THE UNITY of the Church is expressly named when it is said: "There is one body and one Spirit" (Eph 4.4). Whether we regard it as living through a succession of economies or existing contemporaneously in the world in many lands, it is ONE, a society holding the Head and knit together by the same Spirit; though, at some parts of its history, rather believed than capable of being distinctly traced. All true members of the Church, because joined to the Lord, are one Spirit (1Cor 6.17), however differing in language, country, or condition; while they who are without the Spirit cannot be regarded as true members of the Church, because not animated by its vital principle. The Church is ONE not in consequence of its efforts after union — nor in virtue of the mutual harmony which pervades its different parts, for these are but fruits and pledges of a previous unity in the Lord — but in virtue of the one indwelling Spirit.

From the essential relation in which it stands to Christ, the Church is moreover described under figures, which will more appropriately aid our conceptions of its nature than all other definitions put together.

234

Besides the striking figure already named, that of one body and one Spirit, it is called the bride of Christ, showing a mutual relation, a perpetual union, and a preparation for the final perfection (Rev 19.7; 2Cor 11.2), a temple or habitation compacted together — of which Christ is the foundation and chief cornerstone, and each member is a living stone (1Pet 2.5), the vine and branches — one vital principle sustaining the whole (Joh 15.1-6).

These illustrations suffice to prove that Christians are a corporate society, a habitation of God in the Spirit, and that He truly dwells by His Spirit, as He dwelt in the temple of Jerusalem, by clear pledges of His presence. The assemblies of Christians, replenished by His Spirit, are His

temple, where He dwells in a more glorious manner than in Israel (2Cor 3.7). That this is the import of the allusion is obvious from the elucidation which the apostle subjoins from the Old Testament Scriptures (2Cor 6.16-18). For He warns them against such as preached the wisdom of men instead of the revelation of divine grace; and declares the culpable character of their proceedings by allusion to the inhabitation of the Holy Spirit, who condescends to dwell among His people and to walk in them, and to make them the sons and daughters of the Lord Almighty.

The four epithets applied to the Church in the Nicaeno-Constantinopolitan Creed may be accepted without hesitation as furnishing the marks of the Church, viz. ONE, HOLY, CATHOLIC, and APOSTOLIC CHURCH. But, without expatiating on these predicates in detail, let me notice that the Church, as a living organism, enjoys the inhabitation of the Holy Ghost, and makes itself felt in society in a great variety of ways. It is invisible, so far as it rests on the gracious operations of the Spirit. But that distinction between the visible and invisible Church, proper enough — nay, necessary in connection with the points involved in the Romish controversy — was never meant to paralyze the hands of those who labour, within due bounds, to conform the Church to the standard and ideal presented to us in apostolic Christianity. The Church, animated by the Spirit, evinces its vitality and influence in every sphere.

235

The connection of the individual with the Church rests *on the possession of true faith*, or effectual calling by the Holy Spirit. According to the Protestant distinction, as it has been happily formulated, it is the believer's relation to Christ that puts him in connection with the Church; not his connection with the Church that puts him into a saving relation to Christ. And to this universal Church belong all of every age and country who have been engrafted into Christ by the Spirit, whether they are of the Church militant or of the Church triumphant. The four constituents or essential qualities which come to light in connection with the Church as an organized body, may be briefly noticed before we proceed to describe the Spirit's agency.

1. The *constitution* of the Church was the form according to which the apostles, as the organs of a plenary inspiration, moulded the Christian society. And the whole discussion on the true organization of the Church has always turned on the one question, Which form is the most close resemblance to the apostolic model? A constitution of some kind has always been deemed necessary; and apostolic sanction, at least in its great outlines, has never been denied to it.

2. The *element of worship*, another constituent of the Church, is that exercise of the assembled congregation by which the holy priesthood, in a befitting way, by the aid of the Spirit, approaches God through the intercession of the High Priest of our profession, and offers not external sacrifices, which have all been abolished by the one valid and accepted sacrifice, but themselves as living sacrifices (Rom 12.1). And their praises, thanksgivings, and prayers — the fruit of their lips — are represented as spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God by Jesus Christ (1Pet 2.5; Heb 13.15).

236

3. *Confession* is another constituent of the Church. The Christian body replenished with the Holy Ghost, expresses a common testimony, or the consciousness of holding a sum of knowledge or of truth based upon the apostles' doctrine (Act 2.42). And this is so connected with the exercise of faith that the two are as inseparable in the Christian society, as in the case of the individual who believes with the heart and makes confession with the mouth (Rom 10.10). Faith assimilates to itself the objective word of God in such a way that it reproduces that word in the form of a common confession through the influence of the Holy Spirit. It is the Spirit of life that enables the Church to find the adequate expression. On this topic let me add, that only extensive advances in the doctrine and life of the Church render a new Confession warrantable. And as the enlarged experience which sheds increased light on the various truths of revelation not seldom

runs parallel with the rise of new errors, the Church has generally to do two things — present a negative side to error, and fill the foreground with positive truth. Theology is made subservient only so far as to furnish the due expression for the truth held by all in common.

4. *Discipline*, a fourth constituent of the Church, is an important addition or appendix to the other three, for the removal of scandals and for the correction of those who incur censure. The Reformed Church warrantably made this a constituent of the Church as well as the others already named. Writers in foreign Churches, like Guericke and others, do not scruple to condemn the Churches of the Reformed as receding from the sound idea of a Church, and in so far approaching to that of Rome, as they include the elements of discipline and constitution as well as word and sacrament among the conditions or constituents of the Church. These views are a forgetfulness of the fact that the laws of Christ are to be administered under the solemn charge of responsibility to Him; and His approving salutation at last will be based only on faithfulness to Him.

237

To neglect this constituent element, as has been proved by all history, is only to forfeit purity and spiritual influence. Of this the Greek Church is a striking monument. Her downfall to the lowest degradation is traced by Sozomen — one of her own historians — to the dilapidation of her discipline.

How are we to explain Christ's presence in the Church along with the Spirit's agency? Many of the theories on the mode of Christ's presence — in Patristic, Romish, Lutheran, and Anglican theology — would never have been agitated, or would even now be sopited, if these relations had been duly considered and understood by the controversialists on both sides.

Christ's activity as Lord and Head of the Church seems at first sight to militate against the action of the Holy Ghost the Comforter, and conversely. That these important aspects of truth may not have the appearance of coming into collision, let me refer to their relation. The regulation of the Church's life — sometimes spoken of as if it were retained in Christ's own hand, sometimes described as if it were committed to the Holy Spirit — must be regarded as two announcements of the same great truth, without any difference, two sides of one and the same thing. The Lord Jesus, the Mediator, does all by the Holy Spirit in fostering, quickening, guiding the Church; and so intimately are these two things conjoined — the Melchizedek-priesthood on the one hand, and the dispensation of the Spirit on the other — that they must constantly be seen together (Act 2.33). The exalted Christ continuously acts for the Church's good by His Spirit through the word.

Where these two doctrines are sundered in the theological conceptions of individuals or bodies of men, it is to the prejudice of right views of Christ's Person, and to the deterioration of sound views of the sacraments. Thus the Lutheran Church, to maintain her peculiar views of the Lord's Supper, is compelled to lay emphasis on the alleged ubiquity of

238

Christ's humanity. But by so doing they evacuate the Spirit's work in that proportion. The Lord's own teaching is that He acts by the Spirit on His Church, and that He is present not by the ubiquity of His human nature, but by His omni-present Spirit, who is at once in Him and in us, as a perpetual bond or link. The presence of the Holy Spirit in the Church — that is, of Christ by the Spirit whom He obtained by His obedience, and confers from His throne — constitutes the Church's glory.

To put Christ's own OMNIPRESENCE in its proper light, it is necessary to remark that it is one of the perfections of His immutable divine nature — a fact belonging to Him as a divine Person, and that cannot be more or less. It is not a matter of promise, but a fact, an inalienable fact. But HIS GRACIOUS PRESENCE, as the Incarnate One, is matter of promise, and may or may not be

according to His relations with His people; and when Christ promised to be with His Church subsequently to the ascension, He intimated not so much His divine omnipresence 8S a presence by the Spirit — as must be evident to every mind that duly considers the above-mentioned statement. His presence with His people involved gracious ‘privilege, which might be imparted or withheld according to His good pleasure or the emergencies of His Church. And He gave His disciples to understand in His last discourses, that, without the agency of the Holy Spirit, the New Testament Church could neither come into existence nor be perpetuated in the world. Nor was the promise of the Spirit’s presence limited to public occasions or to external institutions. Christ is there undoubtedly by His Spirit. But His presence while felt there by His living disciples, is not bound to more public occasions, nor to ecclesiastical institutions, as its exclusive sphere.

According to the mediatorial economy, based on the order of the Trinity, Christ sends the Holy Ghost, the Comforter, as His deputy. There is no isolated action among the Persons of the Godhead, and cannot be,

239

because they all equally participate in the divine essence, and act according to their order of subsistence in all divine acts. Where the one is, there the others are. This fundamental axiom, in which every intelligent Trinitarian must concur, enables us to obviate those half-truths which are incautiously admitted in the Churches.

The action of Christ and of His Spirit, conjoined, comes vividly before us in all the services and worship of the Church. When the Lord uttered the memorable words: “Where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them” (Mat 18.20), He intimated that by the Spirit He would inhabit ordinances, and make His presence consciously felt. According to the scriptural view of worship, the company of the disciples, depending on Christ’s merits, and conscious that by one Spirit they are all baptized into one body and made to drink into one Spirit (1Cor 12.13), has to continue, as in the first days of the Christian Church, stedfast in the apostles’ doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread and in prayers (Act 2.42).

According to this economy, CHRIST IS PRESENT BY HIS SPIRIT, conducting the communications of God to man, and the worship of man to God, the channel of divine supplies to us, and the medium by which the returns of praise, prayer, service, and obedience are acceptably offered. The Holy Spirit acts in both respects as the Comforter or Deputy in Christ’s name, filling His mystic body and presenting their spiritual sacrifices (1Pet 2.5). This view of worship to which the action of the High Priest and the aid of the Spirit are absolutely essential, is brought out in a memorable psalm: “I will declare Thy name to my brethren; in the midst of the Church will I praise Thee” (Psa 22.22; Heb 2.12). The Lord Jesus acts from God to us and from us to God, in both instances by the power of the Holy Spirit.

This view of Church-worship is vitiated in two opposite ways to the manifest injury of the doctrine of the Spirit —

240

(1) by a blighting Ritualism, and (2) by an evacuating theory not less blighting. Ritualism, Romish or Anglican, agrees in making the Church’s action a substitute for the action of Christ and His Spirit. On whatever ground it is placed, whether it represents the Church’s action as a perpetual continuation of Christ’s life on earth, and therefore a sort of perpetual incarnation, which was Mohler’s theory, or describes the Church’s action as meritorious and propitiatory, which is the common theory, it entirely ignores the operation of the Spirit of God, and binds the results to a mere array of forms. It makes the ever-acting High Priest a mere inactive spectator, and is irrespective of the Spirit’s grace and of the receiver’s faith. The whole transaction is

lodged in other hands. Ritualism conjoins the sacraments and the Spirit in such a sense that the dispensation of the one is equivalent to the communication of the other.

An opposite extreme is the false spiritualism which makes the sacraments but empty signs. Too many in the Reformed Churches, under the spell of an evacuating system which the Germans call Zwinglianism, have gone far to denude sacraments of the Spirit's presence, as if there were no sacramental union between the sign and the thing signified. That there is no virtue in the mere emblems, or in the administrator, is as true on the one side, as it is true on the other side that there is the blessing of Christ and the working of His Spirit to them that by faith receive them. Mr. Stowel, for example, in his work on the Spirit, assails a theory applicable to every Church in Christendom, and one which he owns was not abandoned by the Puritans of England nor by the Non-conformist clergy, in these terms: "If by means of grace," says he, "no more be meant than states of mind in which the Spirit gives us grace, and the connection of such states of mind with the instructions of teachers, and with offices of devotion believingly attended to, we should be only fastidious in taking exception to such language; but if it be the old

241

Church-doctrine of *media gratiae*, the notion that through these means as channels and instruments the Holy Ghost works invisibly within men — against that notion, by whatever words conveyed, we must gravely and conscientiously protest. Neither the Scriptures nor the Christian's experience permit us to doubt that prayer for what God has promised, offered with faith in His promise, is followed by the blessing prayed for; and the history of Christianity abounds with proofs of some established connection between the preaching of the word and the salvation of men's souls. But who that ponders the meaning of words can believe that either prayers or preaching is the means through which the actual gift of salvation is conveyed? It can be no disparagement of so vital an exercise as prayer, to conceive of it as being what it really is, the address of the devout heart to God, but not the channel of God's grace to man. Neither can it be any disparagement of the preaching of the gospel to regard it as being what it really is, the truth of God addressed to men, but not the vehicle o/ the Spirit by which man is prepared to receive the message with the faith whereby we are saved" (p. 223).

These are unhappy views, and too widely diffused, repudiating the theory that the Spirit of God imparts the grace of regeneration through the Church, and the notion of spiritual power belonging to an outward institution. But the gospel is the ministration of the Spirit, and we may maintain that the word and sacraments are made the vehicle or channel of conveying what they announce. These are evacuating principles unknown to the theology of the Reformation and of the Puritanic age as well as to Patristic literature. A false spiritualism separating itself from sacraments and ordinances which God instituted as the channels through which His Spirit is conferred, would, if carried out to its legitimate consequences, lead to a treatment of the sacraments as if they were a superfluous form. The view which Calvin propounded

242

as a safe middle ground was: That sacraments do not impart grace (*ex opere operato*) by their mere administration, but that they are not mere barren signs (*nuda signa*); that they are channels of blessing to every believing recipient; the blessing being given by Christ's own hand, and through the working of the Spirit to them that by faith receive them.

Here it may be proper to show that it is ONE CHURUH OF GOD under a different guise in the Old Testament and in the New. The same Spirit of faith filled the heart of believers, whether they lived before or after the advent of Christ (2Cor 4.13). The Trinitarian relations were the same; and the divine perfections in the matter of our salvation were exhibited in the same way. The sacraments, it is true, were changed more than once to be adapted to different epochs in the history of redemption. Their efficacy, however, was the same through the power of the Spirit in

every economy to all that by faith received them. On this point the Churches of the Reformation were for a time at one in opposition to the Romish doctrine, that the sacraments of the Old Testament were but types of those of the New Testament; that the former communicated nothing, and that the latter conveyed blessings in the mere order of operation. The Reformers maintained without exception, that in both economies the sacraments were identical in import and efficacy. With the Romanists it had long been a dogma that the sacraments of the Israelitish dispensation were only shadows of those instituted for the Christian Church. All the Protestant Churches with one consent maintained the opposite till a different view began to be propounded among the Lutherans. But down, to the time of Chemnitzius we find it held as an accepted opinion in opposition to the Romanists, that there was no essential difference in the sacraments of the two economies. That eminent Lutheran theologian maintained that there was no other grace and no other faith by which men were saved in the Old Testament, than that grace and

243

faith by which men are saved in the New, and no real difference between the spiritual efficacy of the sacraments in the two economies. A general assent was given in the Lutheran and Reformed Churches to the doctrine laid down by Augustin, that the only difference between the sacraments of the two economies was, that those in the Old Testament announced a Saviour about to come, while those of the New Testament announced a Saviour already come. In process of time, Lutheran divines began to modify the common Protestant doctrine; and step by step, by one concession after another, they found themselves constrained, by the necessities of their new position, to drop their confession to the essential identity, and to the equal spiritual efficacy, of the sacraments of both economies. They began to assert, with the Romanists, that the sacraments of the Old Testament were but a type or shadow of the sacraments of the New Testament. In the same way Anglican Ritualists are wont to expound their sentiments. The Reformed Churches never wavered. With Calvin, they have all continued to assert that the covenant of grace was substantially the same, though economically different in form. They never conceded that in the Old Testament there was only type or shadow, and nothing of reality. They maintained that under the Old Testament believers not less really apprehended Christ's atoning sacrifice than is done by believers now, though it was exhibited to them in another way than to us in the New Testament sacraments.

II. Let me now advert to the Church as A MISSIONARY INSTITUTE, and to the work which the Holy Spirit condescends to discharge in connection with the ingathering of new disciples, with the propagation of the gospel, and the revival of religion. It may be noticed that there are three titles — ministers of Christ, ministers of the gospel, ministers of the Church — which are an exhaustive exhibition of the office (Col 1.), and that there is an exercise of the Spirit's power through them, analogous to that which was exercised on the day of Pentecost.

244

The union of disciples in prayer and supplication, and in waiting for the promise of the Father, is also analogous, and never to be interrupted. The instruments by whom the Spirit works are also prepared for service in a similar way, only without the miraculous accompaniments. They are Christians first, and then called to official labour.

The rich supply of extraordinary GIFTS bestowed at Pentecost was not intended to continue when they had served their purpose in founding the Christian Church. The other gifts of an ordinary character were given for the permanent advantage of the Church, and are so essential to her edification, that, without them, she would collapse or disappear.

Their continuance is a constant proof that Christ lives as the dispenser of the Holy Spirit. Some of them are gifts of office — and of every conceivable variety — for acting on the mind of others, while the general body of Christians is supplied with gifts and endowments, wealth and

influence, which the Spirit induces them to wield for the common benefit. The permanence of the Church does not depend on offices alone, as Irving and Lohe represented the matter, nor on gifts alone, as the Plymouth Brethren will have it, but on both conjoined.

Every minister truly called to office by the Spirit of God has a gift which may be described as innate, but brought to light and activity by the regenerating work of the Holy Spirit. Fundamentally, it is a natural or concreated endowment, but called into exercise by the Spirit for the good of the Church, and fitting the possessors to do a work which no other can do so well; and the conscious possession of which should have a twofold effect, should disengage their mind from all tendency to envy the gifts of others, and to be discontented with their own.

245

The first disciples were called to wait in the attitude of humble supplicants for the power with which they were to be endued by the Holy Spirit coming upon them (Act 1.8); and we have there an example of what is ever to be reproduced. Before this they evinced ignorance and prejudice, timidity and shrinking from the cross, ambition and pride. After the descent of the Spirit there was no more debate who should be the greatest; they forgot self, and rose to an elevation previously unknown. They imbibed new ideas of the spirituality of Christ's kingdom. The Spirit brought all things back to their remembrance. The instruments that the Spirit formed felt that they are rather passive than active in the whole work-tools in another's hand.

Here we must refer to THE MINISTRY OF THE SPIRIT (2Cor 3.8). With regard to this remarkable expression, it may denote one of two things. It may mean — 1) that the Holy Spirit, as the author of the ministry in its manifold varieties, constitutes the offices, raises up the men, and endows them with their rich variety of gifts; or (2) it may mean, as I rather think, that the gospel ministry, whether in the hand of the apostles — the chief functionaries — or of ordinary office-bearers, is exercised with the accompanying power of the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven. The expression will thus convey the thought that the Spirit gives the spiritual and edifying effect along with the gifts and ordinances which have been appointed in the Church. In speaking of the union between these ordinances and the Spirit's accompanying power, precision is necessary in order to avoid excess of statement on the one hand, and defect of statement on the other. An examination of the Acts of the Apostles discovers to us the Spirit's present operation everywhere along with the preaching of the gospel. And whenever the veil is lifted up, the reader gets a glimpse into the movements of the kingdom of God, and into the unseen agency of the Spirit, which is everywhere declared. And from this we infer His ever present activity in all centuries and localities alike. The Church has not been left to herself.

246

We find united the greatest apparent opposites: weakness and power, emptiness and sufficiency, limitation and the boundless resources of omnipotence, the earthen vessel ready to go to pieces at the slightest pressure and the excellency of power, an unimposing agency with the mightiest force that stirs humanity; in a word, what Milton calls "the irresistible might of weakness," or what the prophet calls the worm Jacob thrashing the mountains and beating them small. The ministry is so connected with the Spirit that the human speaker is but the instrument, and He the hand that moves them; and nothing remains to man but the labour.

An inscrutable sovereignty appears in dispensing the divine blessing, and in founding the Church in any locality (Act 2.1, 11.20). This appears even in connection with an apostle. It may be proper, at the outset, to say that success did not lie within his resources or appliances in such a sense that it could be made the subject of human calculation; that the increase was of God (1Cor 1.6); and that men cannot dispense blessings at their discretion. While that is one side of a great truth, it is not to be denied that the preacher must have an organic aptitude for his office, or be a fit instrument. And, among other things comprehended in this — such as personal

consecration, dependence on God's Spirit, incessant prayer, and the like — it is commonly the man imbued with the greatest desire for fruit who most plentifully reaps it.

Here the question may be raised: Has any connection been divinely established between the Spirit's exercise of saving power and the proclamation of reconciliation or redemption by the cross? It is a momentous question, but capable of a distinct answer. We must distinguish. On the one hand, God never puts the blessings of salvation out of His own hand into the hand of others, nor diffuses the operations of His Spirit by any other channel than in the line of His electing purpose. On the other hand, *a connection is established between the preaching of reconciliation by the cross and the exercise of the Spirit's power, to an extent that cannot be affirmed of any other type of doctrine.*

247

In making this statement, we are neither treading on the region of mystery, nor treading insecurely — for we have the guidance of the divine word. The apostle says: "This only would I learn of you, received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith, that is, the preaching of faith" (ἀκοὴ πίστεως); a statement intimating that the Spirit had been received by the Galatians, not in connection with a doctrine which laid stress on ritual observances or a more moral code legally enforced, but in connection with the proclamation of redemption by the blood of Christ, and received by faith. To human view, indeed, no obvious link of connection can be perceived between that style of preaching and the transforming power of the Holy Spirit. But a divine connection does exist, as is there explicitly declared. When the apostle calls the gospel "the power of God" (Rom 1.16), and the preaching of Christ crucified "the power of God" (1Cor 1.24), we have a statement which explicitly affirms that the DIVINE POWER of the Spirit goes associated with the proclamation of the atonement, but will not be associated with a style of teaching which substitutes any other theme.

The first and most momentous question is: On what footing does the preacher take men up in reference to the Judge of all the earth, and what is the specific which he brings home to them as adequate to meet their case? Where an uncertain sound is given on RUIN, REDEMPTION, and REGENERATION, the sinner fails to recognise himself in the mirror held up to him. There is nothing to bring him into the divine presence, or to bring home the pointed address, "Thou art the man." Nothing can be named as more important than the precision with which the line is drawn between law and gospel, which was the distinctive feature of the Pauline theology, and the restoration of which was the great achievement of the Reformation, which, after the long torpor of ages, brought back preaching to the place it occupied in apostolic times.

248

Without that distinction, preaching loses its edge. The law is enforced on the impenitent, and the gospel commended to the contrite. The Reformation made this distinction familiar to all men as a household word, and gave it the prominence that belongs to it.

The Church is gathered in any given locality only where Christ crucified is preached. This held true in the founding of the Church at first, and holds true in the planting of it in any heathen land. And the same doctrine which formed it is necessary to sustain it from age to age; for, as Luther happily expressed it, the article of Justification is the article of a standing or falling Church. The only security of the Church is to give no uncertain sound on the great doctrines of Christianity; the deep-seated ruin of mankind and their vast guilt; the Deity, the mission, and atonement of the Lord Jesus Christ; the necessity of regeneration by the Holy Ghost; the need of forgiving grace; the assurance of salvation; the tenor of the covenant of grace. "I am not sensible," said Dr. Chalmers, when referring to the actual though undesigned experiment which he prosecuted for upwards of twelve years in Kilmany, "that all the vehemence with which I urged the virtues and the proprieties of social life had the weight of a feather on the moral habits

of my parishioners. And it was not till I got impressed by the utter alienation 'of the heart in all its desires and affections from God; it was not till reconciliation to Him became the distinct and the prominent object of my ministerial exertions; it was not till I took the scriptural way of laying the method

of reconciliation before them; it was not till the free offer of forgiveness through the blood of Christ was urged upon their acceptance, and the Holy Spirit given, through the channel of Christ's Mediatorship, to all who ask Him was set before them as the unceasing object of their dependence and their prayers; it was not, in one word, till the contemplations of my people were turned to these great and essential elements

249

in the business of a soul providing for its interest with God and the concerns of its eternity, that I ever heard of any of those subordinate reformatations which I aforetime made the earnest and the zealous, but I am afraid at the same time the ultimate, object of my earlier ministrations."¹ My object in adducing this remarkable experience is to show an instance how the preacher who withholds the doctrine of the cross and the immediate reconciliation with God, which must always go along with it, whether the silence is due to the fact that the preacher's own mind has never adequately been awakened to discern its value, or acts upon a system of reserve without making the central doctrine of Christianity bear on man's relation to the Judge of all — fails to wield any power. The opposite doctrine awakens souls, is associated with the Holy Spirit, and plants or propagates the Church.

I shall briefly advert to THE SPIRIT'S WORK IN A RELIGIOUS AWAKENING. Though this cannot be made the subject of human calculation, we find it occurring sometimes in a continuous ingathering of individuals, sometimes in a multitude of simultaneous conversions, or in great movements which carry with them the marks of a genuine work of the Holy Spirit. Many things may occur of a mixed character in an exciting period of religious effervescence. The opinion of a large class, who betray a lack of spiritual discernment and an incapacity to form a judgment as to its nature and tendency, will always be received with little deference. They who are wedded to a theory of development, are in danger of denying any interposition of the Spirit from on high. Others, embarrassed by a system of sacramental grace by which they allow their minds to be swayed, mistake a movement which overleaps these barriers and marches forward in a path of its own. And having adopted a principle with which a religious awakening on a large scale will not coincide, they run the risk of denying it as a legitimate religious phenomenon.

250

Any system which has no place for the universal priesthood of believers is prone to look askance on an outpouring of the Spirit connected with the immediate action of the Church's living Head on His disciples. An awakening of this more general kind constitutes for the most part a new epoch with a well-defined peculiarity, and is replete with great results. The gleaner in Church history, at a subsequent stage, estimates its influence on thought, on action, and on ecclesiastical life as at the Reformation, when the effusion of the Holy Spirit was more marked than at any previous period from the apostolic age. The effusion of the Spirit in the Puritanic age, followed as it was by the cognate movement of Spener and Francke in the German Churches, exercised an influence, the force of which continued long, nay, continues to this day. The great awakening of last century, pervading England, Scotland, and America, under Whitefield, Wesley, and Edwards, gave rise to those Bible, missionary, and tract societies which still continue in the Churches. Only under such influences can a solvent be found powerful enough for producing such results.

¹ See Dr. Chalmers' memorable address to the people of Kilmany.

The work of the Spirit, wherever it occurs, requires to be discriminated from its accompaniments and from the counterfeits that may be expected. It is asked, Can these be genuine cases of conversion where the whole is effected in an hour, and where the mind passes with astonishing rapidity from deep conviction to triumphant faith? We reply, it is not a question of time, but of thoroughness and intensity. That a man, and a multitude of men, may under the overwhelming pressure of conviction consequent on a manifestation of God's holiness and inviolable law, and of that utter ruin and boundless guilt in which men are involved, be shut up by the Spirit to Christ within the space of an hour or two, while not a characteristic of a sound conversion and not a single fruit of the Spirit are found to be wanting, is proved by the evidence of facts. But the sudden deliverance of the converts from the dangerous errors in which they previously lived, receives an explanation in the same way.

251

At such a moment, when men come under deep convictions, the previous cavils against the doctrines of the gospel are found to pass away like a cloud; the Arminian accepts election; the Arian, the Deity of Christ and the atonement; the Romanist, the sole mediatorship of Christ, without hesitation.

But it is further asked, How can cases of conversion be admitted, when they receive impressions, amid their common avocations, suddenly and without any special application of the word? I answer, There is no need for asserting that the word is not employed: as the sword of the Spirit, the word is used in every case. The word, deposited in the heart from childhood, and quickened by the addresses, conversations, or providences which lead to the decisive issue, may have occupied the mind before the convictions reached their climax.

. Many things occur which all too plainly prove that it is necessary not only to pray for an awakening, but for wisdom equal to the occasion when it is imparted. Mere religious excitement is no unchallengeable evidence of the genuineness of a spiritual awakening, nor any passport to the confidence of the Christian community, unless it be conclusively proved that divine truth — that is, the word of God in what may be called the true outline of that word — was the means of producing it. If not called forth by the instrumentality of divine truth, it may be little better than a spurious medley, or a spasmodic movement by mere human appliances.

It is not to be expected, indeed, that no tares will be mingled with the wheat, or that there will be no over-hasty admissions or over-confident assertions as to numbers, no exhibition of converts prematurely thrust into public notice, no censorious judgments, no noisy profession followed by a fall. It would not be a work of God if there were no imitations, for where the Spirit builds a church, Satan builds a chapel. The tests which Shepherd adduces in his treatise on

252

the parable of the ten virgins, or which Edwards employs in his work on the religious affections, though they cannot be applied in the early stages of a religious awakening, when the two classes cannot be distinguished from each other, ought never to be absent from the mind of those who are called to guide a religious movement.

These memorable seasons are to be hailed as interpositions of the Spirit's power. "It may be observed," says Edwards¹ "that from the fall of man to our day, the work of redemption in its effect has mainly been carried on by remarkable communications of the Spirit of God. Though there be a more constant influence of God's Spirit always in some degree attending His ordinances, yet the way in which the greatest things have been done towards carrying on this work always has been by remarkable effusions at special seasons of mercy." The Church's ever-

¹ *History of Redemption*, Period I. part 1.

living Head knows how to usher in creative epochs, to rally His people to some converging point through the lapse of centuries, and to gather up under this powerful influence isolated opinions into one consistent whole. When a former awakening has spent its force, when the elements of thought or action previously supplied threaten to become effete, a new impulse is commonly communicated by Him who interposes at various stages to make all things new. The previous condition of things is commonly such as renders a new sect or a new organization well-nigh inevitable. In a dead or stagnant period, such as prevailed at the time of the formation of not a few of the existing Churches, the spiritual life found no welcome within the pale of the denomination from which the separation was made. But when existing Churches take up the new life by a process of assimilation, they are recruited by numbers and refreshed by a new stream of divine life.

In a devotional publication of Neander, on our Lord's entrance into Jerusalem, he points out that the kingdom of God

253

comes at first as the leaven or as the grain of mustard seed; but that when it has continued to work for a season in this hidden way, the effect next becomes perceptible in great facts, which force themselves on men's notice and form the great moving powers in the world's history. He adds, to suppose that the kingdom of God must always be as the leaven, would be as great an error as to conclude that the visible results come first. Men look on with awe and wonder when some supply of the Spirit, of which they can neither tell the laws nor estimate the momentum, breaks forth from the kingdom of God and sweeps over the community.

Without entering into other things involved in this theme, let me close with a few words on two points which, more than any other, give tone and colour to a time of general awakening.

1. As to the peculiar mode of preaching, to which the instruments employed are usually led, it largely partakes of the inculcation of immediate conversion. While all the other truths are brought out connected with law and grace, the ruin and the remedy, the occasion naturally leads the preacher to urge the necessity of the great change, and the duty of immediate compliance with all those awakening motives that go to determine the choice. The criminality of every hour's delay is enforced by the thought that it is another hour's rebellion. This must be accompanied with the further statement, that *without the Holy Ghost they cannot turn*; that they must, and yet cannot; that they are under obligation, and yet helplessly unable; — a double motive brought to bear upon the mind together, which has been remarkably, owned in the preaching of America, and fitted to drive from every refuge those who choose for themselves some middle ground or debateable land where in the meantime they may rest. At this point this preaching comes in with overwhelming force. It shuts up the sinner under a twofold motive — of obligation and inability. It compels action and dependence. It brings a twofold force to bear on the secure.

254

These two truths must go together; for the one without the other deprives the enforcement of conversion of its power. Withhold a sense of man's dependence, or tell him that whenever he pleases God is ready to second his efforts, and the entire force of every motive is removed. But tell him that all his actions are at the best but the efforts of an enemy till his nature is changed, and that God is, notwithstanding all these efforts, under no obligation to any unconverted man; let him feel the force of both motives — the present duty, the awful issues that enter into his choice, the utter, inability to turn, the absolute freedom and sovereignty of God to give or to withhold His renewing Spirit — and there is nothing more calculated to shut up the mind to immediate submission. He must, yet cannot turn. He must, yet cannot convert himself. Whitefield, referring to the effects of this style of American preaching, says: "After they have done all, God may deny them mercy. It is for preaching in this manner that I like the Messrs.

Tennent. They wound deeply before they heal. They know that there is no promise but to him that believeth." Such is Whitefield's testimony, than which we could not have a higher. Dr. Griffin accounts for the numerous revivals in America from the belief of an instantaneous regeneration, and the sinfulness of every moral effort up to that moment, and the duty of immediate submission.

2. As to the peculiar mode of praying, we may say that in every season of general awakening the Christian community waits just as they waited for the effusion of the Spirit, with one accord in prayer and supplication, in the interval between the Ascension and Pentecost. No other course has been prescribed; and the Church of the present has all the warrant she ever had to — wait, expect, and pray. The first disciples waited in the youthfulness of simple hope, not for a spirit which they had not, but for more of the Spirit which they had; and Christianity has not outlived itself.

255

The attitude of the Church in the first days after the Ascension, when the disciples waited for the Spirit, should be the Church's attitude still. And no more mischievous and misleading theory could be propounded, nor anyone more dishonouring to the Holy Spirit, than the principle that because the Spirit was poured out at Pentecost, the Church has no need, and no warrant, to pray any more for the effusion of the Spirit of God. On the contrary, the more the Church asks the Spirit and waits for His communications, the more she receives.¹

¹ A remarkable passage on prayer, and on working by the power of prayer, occurs in Foster's essay on the application of the epithet "Romantic:" "I am convinced," says he, "that every man who, amidst his serious projects, is apprised of his dependence on God, as completely as that dependence is a fact, will be impelled to pray, and anxious to induce his serious friends to pray, almost every hour. He will as little without it promise himself any noble success, as a mariner would expect to reach a distant coast by having his sails spread in a stagnation of air. I have intimated my fear that it is visionary to expect any unusual success in the human administration of religion unless there are unusual omens; now a most emphatical spirit of prayer would be such an omen; and the individual who should solemnly determine to try its last possible efficacy, might probably find himself becoming a much more prevailing agent in his little sphere. And if the whole, or the greater number of the disciples of Christianity were, with an earnest, unalterable determination of each, to combine that heaven should not withhold one single influence, which the very utmost of conspiring and persevering supplication would obtain, it would be the sign that a revolution of the world was at hand."

THIRD DIVISION.

HISTORICAL SURVEY OF THE DOCTRINE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

IT only remains for me, in this last division, to subjoin as briefly as possible a historic outline of the development of the doctrine of the Holy Spirit, and a sketch of the discussions which it has undergone in the course of centuries. The history of this doctrine touches theology at so many points, sometimes in connection with the Trinity, sometimes with inspiration, sometimes with the doctrines of grace, at other times with the Person and mediation of Christ, that, were we to attempt a survey of all these debates, there is scarcely a point in the whole field of polemical theology or Church history which we should not be compelled to traverse. We must fix our eye on the salient points, therefore, and on the marked epochs in the history of the doctrine, that we may not be engulfed in details personal, dogmatic, or ecclesiastical History, with its parallel testimony to Scripture, has a great importance which is not to be ignored; and it must be borne in mind that certain points of the doctrine at one time come more prominently into view, and others at another; that this topic at one time acquires interest, and that it falls again comparatively into abeyance.

In the very earliest Christian literature — that is, in the Apostolic Fathers — and in the Epistle of Clemens especially, we find that the allusions to the Holy Spirit are all in the interest of spiritual religion, and by no means polemical (Clem. chap. 46.). The circular letter issued by the Church of Smyrna after Polycarp's death is of the same nature.

257

The whole doctrine of the Spirit was at that time practical. The doctrine of the Spirit was accepted from the earliest age as an elementary truth in connection with the baptismal formula by young and old, by learned and unlearned. This formula was a rudimentary truth to every baptized man: for there never was a time when a Christian disciple did not confess the Deity and saving work of all the three Persons of the Godhead — that is, when he was not thoroughly instructed as a catechumen in the doctrine of the Trinity, and accepted it as a primary truth with the first profession of Christianity. In the Creed, which was only an echo of the baptismal formula, the Christian Church, from the first, over all her borders, never hesitated to declare: "I believe in the Holy Ghost," and Christians were guided by this rule in the course of ages to find their way through all the Trinitarian controversies — the Church simply appealing to that baptismal formula, and applying it for the refutation of every single error on the subject of the Trinity.

The doctrine of the Spirit was for a considerable time unassailed. The early Fathers, having no occasion to define the topic, as was done at a later time, simply speak of the Spirit as a divine Person. As regards the article of the Spirit, the doctrine of the Marcionites formed a marked antithesis to what the Church had always maintained; and this led to a style of language which the Nicaeno-Constantinopolitan Creed retains to this day. The erratic leader of the sect, Marcion, in his violent polemic against the Old Testament and the God of the Old Testament, made use of language disavowed by all Christian men. He represented the Old Testament as the production of the subordinate God of the Jews, and endeavoured to overthrow the entire Old Testament revelation on the plea that it did not proceed from THE SAME SPIRIT that animated the founders of the Christian Church.

258

As Marcion and his followers took up such an antagonistic attitude to the whole Old Testament, the entire body of Church teachers testified to the prophetic Spirit, and confessed that one and the same Spirit spoke in both economies — THE PROPHETS by the Spirit foretelling the Messiah's advent, and THE APOSTLES by the same Spirit announcing the historic fact. The words which they put into the Church's mouth, and which we find repeated in the Constantinopolitan Creed, were: "The Spirit who spoke by the prophets." It is clear from the Patristic literature that has come down to us, that from the earliest times the Church had the doctrine of the Spirit in its substance and practical bearing, though the points were not fully thought out, and the terms of the later nomenclature were not as yet employed. The defects which we shall have occasion to trace came in afterwards, and were mainly due to the Greek philosophy and to the false adjustments which were attempted in regard to it.

We come next in order to the Christian apologists. Justin Martyr is an emphatic witness to the distinct personality of the Holy Spirit. Semisch, who devoted a lifelong study to this writer, states that the title "prophetic Spirit" occurs twenty-seven times; the title "Holy Spirit," thirty-two times; "the holy prophetic Spirit," four times; "the Spirit of God," four times; "the divine Spirit," three times; "the prophetic Spirit of God," once; "the divine holy prophetic Spirit," once. There is not so much said, nor so clearly said, of the third Person of the Trinity as of the second. But the Spirit's personality is clearly and emphatically stated. Thus he speaks of the explicit confession of the Trinity in connection with baptism, when he says that it was performed in the name of the Father of the universe and Lord God, and of our Saviour Jesus Christ, and of the Holy Ghost (1 *Apol.* 61). The same Trinitarian formula was used in the celebration of the Supper, the officiating minister offering up praise and glory to the Father of the universe, through the name of the Son and Holy Ghost (chap. 65.).

259

In the same first *Apology* (A.D. 139) there are passages where Justin once and again denies the charge of Atheism, and names as the objects of Christian adoration, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. I shall adduce two of these passages, because they are conclusive as to Justin's Trinitarianism: "What man of sound mind will not acknowledge that we are not Atheists, since we worship the Maker of this universe ... and Him who was our teacher (τὸν διδάσκαλόν) in these things, Jesus Christ, Son of this true God—holding Him in the second place; and the prophetic Spirit (πνεῦμα τε προφητικόν) we with reason honour" (chap. 13.). The one God and the three objects of Christian worship cannot be more explicitly exhibited, connected together as they are by a Greek particle (τε) which, as Hand¹ has proved, links together objects of co-ordinate rank with a certain dissimilarity peculiar to themselves.

The same thing may be traced in the well-known passage which has received so much discussion from Romanists on the one hand and Unitarians on the other. But if we take along with us the passage which we have just adduced, little difficulty will be found either in its structure or its import. The passage is as follows: "Whence also we are called Atheists. And we confess that with regard to such reputed gods we are Atheists; but not with regard to the true God, the Father of justice, temperance, and the other virtues, without any mixture of evil. But Him, and the Son (who came from Him and gave us instruction in these things, and concerning the host of the other good angels following Him and, made like to Him), and the prophetic Spirit (πνεῦμά τε τὸ προφητικόν), we worship and adore, honouring them with reason and truth" (chap. 6.). That we have (1) the three Persons of the Godhead linked together by the Greek particles (ἐκεῖνόν τε καὶ τὸν υἱὸν πνεῦμά τε τὸ προφητικόν), is evident at a glance to any true philologist. That we have (2) the well-known Greek expression of two accusatives after

¹ See Hand's dissertation on τε.

260

the verb “to teach,” the one denoting the person taught, and the other the art and science in which he is instructed, can admit of little doubt (διδάξαντα ἡμᾶς ταῦτα καὶ τὸν στρατόν). Scultetus, followed by Bishop Bull, was led by the true instinct of sound philology to see that this sense alone satisfies the import of the words and the demands of the connection; and they both pour out well-merited scorn on the Romanists who wrested them, and still wrest them, from their scope to countenance the worship of angels, with a different degree of honour. This is to make a fourth object of worship, and to thrust it in between the Son and the Spirit. As I have already assigned the only admissible translation, I need not refer to the rendering which construes the words so as to intimate that Christ came teaching us and the host of other good angels. That is the rendering of Dr. Samuel Clarke, who puts it thus: “Who came forth from Him and taught these things to us, and to the whole host of good angels.” It will in that case be a declaration that the angels as well as we are instructed by our Lord. But that statement was by no means in Justin’s scope or design.

It has often been said that Justin confounds the Logos and the Holy Spirit. But a more critical inquiry into his words serves to prove only that these two divine Persons are in office closely connected, but not confounded. Justin certainly held that the Father, Son, and Spirit are from eternity, though he might not put his thoughts in the same definite form that was used in subsequent times, either to define the generation of the Son or the procession of the Spirit. But he was beyond all doubt a Trinitarian, though he might not clearly bring out that the economic Trinity presupposes the ontological Trinity.

1. The doxologies to the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, which were everywhere in use in the early Greek Church, furnish a conclusive proof of the acceptance of the doctrine of the Spirit, and of the prevalence of Trinitarian views.

261

Thus, in the narrative of Polycarp’s martyrdom, the truth of which, as given in the encyclical of the Church of Smyrna, and in nearly the same terms by Eusebius, is above suspicion, the martyr declares in his closing act of worship: “For this, and for all things, I praise Thee, I bless Thee, I glorify Thee, with the eternal and heavenly Jesus Christ, Thy beloved Son, with whom, to Thee and to the Holy Ghost, be glory both now and through all ages to come.” Basil, in his treatise on the Holy Spirit, states that “the glory to the Father with the Holy Ghost” was a familiar usage older than human memory, and that it was practised in the Church ever since the gospel was preached (chap. 29.). That a doxology to the Holy Ghost implies a belief in His personality is self-evident, because worship is never given to mere names or personifications. And we may regard these doxologies as taking their rise in the most natural way — as, in truth, nothing else but the inward and devout response of the worshipper to the baptismal formula. The Creed was the response in the confession of the mouth, and the doxology was a similar response in the devotion of the heart. Basil adduces another doxology of Africanus from the fifth book of his *Chronicon*: “We render thanks to Him who gave our Lord Jesus Christ to be a Saviour, to whom, with the Holy Ghost, be glory and majesty for ever.” Basil also quotes to the same purpose from others — for example, a passage from Clemens which ascribes life to the distinct Persons of the Godhead (ξῆ ὁ θεὸς καὶ ὁ κύριος Ἰησοῦς Χριστός καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον); and another passage from the doxology introduced into the Church of Neo-Caesarea by Gregory Thaumaturgus: “Glory to God the Father and Son, *with the Holy Ghost*,” the import of which, as Gregory was careful to set forth in the Confession of Faith preserved in the Church which he formed, was to confess a perfect Trinity in glory, eternity, and power, without separation or diversity of nature.

262

And in answer to Aetius, who would argue for a disparity in the Persons, Basil is at pains to prove that an equality of honour was intended by the terms, and a full belief that the Spirit possessed the same divine nature. By the use of these doxologies two things were intimated. The Persons were held to be distinct because they were distinctly worshipped, and all the three Persons to whom the glory is ascribed must have been regarded as participating in the same numerical divine essence.

2. The supernatural work of the Spirit in the inspiration of the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament was never exhibited with greater clearness and force than by the early Fathers of the Greek Church. The impieties of Marcion and the Gnostics induced them to mature and formulate their views. They vindicated the apostles' authority and the plenary inspiration of the Spirit with a fulness of conviction and energy such as has rarely ever been evinced, and certainly, never surpassed in any other quarter. The ordinary operations of the Spirit, as we shall see, have been much more correctly and fully displayed in other schools which were less under the spell of philosophic systems and sacramental grace. But nowhere has the miraculous gift of the Spirit in inspiring prophets and apostles been more amply displayed. Thus Justin Martyr, in speaking of the sacred writers as a stringed instrument, says: "Their task was but to surrender themselves wholly to the working of the Spirit of God, that the divine plectrum descending from heaven might make use of holy men as of a harp or lyre, in order to reveal to us the knowledge of divine and heavenly things." With not less point, Irenaeus says of the Scriptures: "They are spoken by the Word of God and His Spirit; while we in the degree in which we are inferior, and stand at the greatest distance from the Word of God and His Spirit, are in need of the knowledge of His mysteries." And again: "The Logos has given us a fourfold gospel which is held together by one Spirit."

263

The quotations which have been collected from the Greek Fathers on the subject of inspiration by Lardner, Tollner, Rudelbach, and Westcott show how the early Church regarded the Scriptures as the Spirit's wonderful work. Thus Origen, speaking of the perfection of Scripture in connection with inspiration, says: "The sacred books are pervaded by the fulness of the Spirit. There is nothing either in the prophets, or in the law, or in the Gospels, or in the Epistles, which does not spring from the fulness of the divine majesty." The mode in which the Greek Fathers often introduce a quotation by omitting the human writer and naming the Holy Spirit as the real author, is one of their, most marked peculiarities: "As the Holy Ghost saith," The importance and value of all parts of the Scriptures, as the productions or words of the Holy Spirit, are constantly asserted. Thus, to mention Origen, we find him saying: "We can by no means say of the writings of the Holy Ghost that there is anything superfluous or idle in them, although many a thing may appear dark to many."

3. But the Greek writers, it must be admitted, labour under great defects. Of the ordinary operations of the Holy Spirit they have little to say. The remarks of Semisch embody a criticism which, however depreciatory it may seem to the literature of the Greek Church, cannot be regarded by anyone who is largely conversant with that literature on the subject of the Spirit's inward operations as either prejudiced or unjust. "When treating of this subject," says Semisch, "they seem embarrassed and perplexed. They felt themselves obliged by the Biblical writings, and especially by the baptismal formula, to place the Spirit as a third object of devotion; but, in truth, they knew not how to bring this object into a living connection with their existing theology; they were kept in constant vacillation on the question, *What position ought to be assigned to the Spirit* in His relations to the Father and Son — to the world — and especially to the work of redemption?"

264

A little farther on, Semisch says of Justin Martyr, to whom his remarks were meant more expressly to apply: "Of a continued operation of the Spirit on Christians he has nothing to say; he also regards the heathen world as hermetically sealed against it."

Some may regard that estimate as prejudiced and one-sided. But it is the testimony of a man whose judgment, from long and sustained inquiries, is entitled to great respect; and every one who knows the Greek Fathers will so far agree with him. A difference obtained between the Eastern and Western Church, as will afterwards more fully appear. The Greek apologists, with somewhat superficial views of sin, and spell-bound by the Greek philosophy, from which they never fully emancipated themselves, extolled Christianity as the absolute reason, rather than God's remedy for guilt and sin. Thus Justin, who went from one philosophical school to another in order to ease a restless mind and pacify an aching heart, found what he sought in Christianity. But by him it was largely viewed as the adequate relief and resting-place of the soul, because it met his previous inquiries, and shed light upon problems which were previously inscrutable.

To the Greek mind SIN was always too much an outward fact or a moral infirmity rather than an all-pervading reign of corruption and guilt for which an adequate remedy was to be provided. The Greek mind was satisfied with a too superficial discovery of the doctrine of sin. And this goes far to explain why it is that they have so little to say upon the Spirit's continued operations on the individual Christian. The Greek literature, considered as an edifying and spiritual literature, is of immensely less value as to everything bearing on the Spirit's work than the writings of the school of Augustin, or of Anselm, or of Bernard, or of Luther, or of Calvin, or of the Puritans.

265

The rise of MONTANISM in Mysia between 157 and 171, forms the next fact in the history of opinion in reference to the Holy Spirit; and its refutation served a most important purpose in the Church. As the supernatural gifts conferred by apostles had but recently ceased, it was only what was to be expected in the course of things that some enthusiastic Christian of weak mind but fervent piety and zeal should appear to claim their restoration in his own person. Montanus was just such an one, a man of extravagant opinions and ascetic rigour, who lamented the prevalent laxity, and was carried headlong by Chiliastic sentiments. His way was prepared for him by the common belief based on what was deemed apostolic statements, that the Spirit of prophecy should not be withdrawn from the Church till the Lord should come. Hence many were ready to listen to an enthusiast who should arrogate the function of a prophet. And the crude utterances, ecstasies, and prophecies to which Montanus and his female associates, Maximilla and Priscilla, gave expression — however offensive to sober minds — found credit with many, and even with Tertullian. As to the Montanist views, I shall touch only those which bear on the work of the Spirit.

While they held the Catholic doctrine of the Trinity, their error consisted in maintaining that the Paraclete who animated the apostles was restored to Montanus; that it was necessary to recognise the spiritual gifts in Him; and that the *Christian rule which imposed a full restraint on the flesh*, and which could not be received even from the apostles, was now announced by Him as the instrument which the Comforter used for that purpose. He declared that for Christians mature manhood was now attained, as it had not been attained either under the law and prophets or under the gospel. These men held that all true Christians have the Holy Ghost, that the rights of such as possessed the spiritual gifts were paramount, and that all office in the Church must make way for their exercise.

The discussions to which these views gave origin were important, and the refutation of their extravagant first principles lodged important truth in men's minds both as to the mode of divine revelation and as to the finality of Scripture.

266

As to the mode of a divine communication, we have fragments preserved by Eusebius of a work written by Miltiades, which aimed to prove, against the Montanists, that a prophet could not speak in ecstasy, that is, without the calm possession of his mental powers. This fact implies that the Montanist effusions must have been like similar effusions of later times — turbid, fanatical, and confused. Tertullian threw his shield over that excited mood of mind as not only necessary, but befitting in one who was overshadowed by the divine power. But in saying so, he spoke as the apologist of the system which he had embraced. The Church of whom Epiphanius may be taken as the representative expressed a wholly different view: “Let us,” says he, “compare what is asserted by these parties with that which is undeniably contained alike in the Old and New Testaments, which is also seen and predicted in truth, and thereby test what is true prophecy and what is false. The true prophet spoke with the complete tranquillity of the mental powers, so that one thing followed another in a certain order; he spoke by the Holy Ghost, and therefore uttered everything with great confidence.” We find similar sentiments expressed by Basil: “Some suppose,” says he, “that the prophets prophesied in ecstasy, so that the human spirit was as it were overshadowed by the divine. But this is against the premiss of the divine inhabitation; for how can the Spirit of wisdom and knowledge deprive anyone of his senses?”

Another question was: Is the Church — since the canon of Scripture was closed — warranted to expect any further immediate revelations or prophetic visions? The ancient Church, as against the Montanists, answered in the negative. It was a question, not what God can do, but whether He will, besides the written word, communicate any further revelations of the counsel of His will.

267

And the discussion of this question with the Montanists anchored the Church in the conviction that it is rash and unwarrantable to expect any further disclosures from the Spirit of God, and that immediate revelations are rather to be viewed as emanating from the adversary changed into an angel of light. To the allegation that the Church ought to enjoy extraordinary miraculous gifts, and that she has lost them by her own fault and through her own unbelief, the answer then given was that extraordinary gifts were never promised to the Church as a permanent inheritance, subsequently to the closing of the canon. And that style of argument has been confirmed by the unbroken experience of nearly two millenniums attesting that they were withdrawn, and that they are not to be regarded as forfeited by her own fault.

We turn to the discussions which assailed THE DIVINE PERSONALITY of the Holy Spirit. The truth on this point required to be vindicated against two phases of error, known as SABELLIANISM on the one hand, and ARIANISM or Macedonianism on the other, which were in a certain respect antagonistical to each other, and yet at one in their ultimate ground. There was a certain collision of mind between the two, but they occupied the attitude of producing or stimulating each other. And they agreed in regarding the divine Being as unipersonal, not Trinitarian.

As to Sabellianism, the theory of modalism, or the Trinity of mere manifestation, it found its first utterance (A.D. 200) in Praxeas of Asia Minor, who succeeded about the end of the second century in forming a party, and even in gaining over to his views Victor, Bishop of Rome. This theory was accepted by Noetus of Smyrna, against whom we have the valuable homily of Hippolytus. It was accepted by Beryllus of Bostra, whom Origen reclaimed at a counsel held in A.D. 244. Above all, it was resolutely maintained by Sabellius, presbyter of Ptolemais in the Libyan Pentapolis, who from the year 218 became the head of the party, and who is described as the subtlest of the anti-Trinitarians.

268

A certain obscurity envelopes the origin of Sabellianism, which long troubled the peace of the Church. It propounded the opinion that the terms Father, Son, and Holy Ghost were but different names of a unipersonal God. It was the first, or one of the first, errors on the Trinity *that got a footing within the Church*,¹ and it is the error to which modern thought discovers a decided inclination to return. It was borrowed in a large measure from the Gnostics or Cerinthians, who not only denied a proper Trinity, but resolved all into appearance or manifestation. These forms of error were outside the Church. Sabellianism was the first anti-Trinitarian tendency that found access within the pale of the Church, and became the occasion of introducing a form of thought opposed to the most elementary truths of Christianity. Within the Church's pale, Sabellianism sprung from the desire to solve the mystery of the Trinity in unity by propounding the notion of a uni-personal God variously manifested, or a mere modal distinction in the Godhead. During THE THIRD CENTURY it acquired a wide diffusion; and in many quarters it was boldly asserted. On this principle, of course, the Son and Spirit could have no part *in creation*, for they were not yet — there could be no *atonement* on this principle, for there was no other person of the Trinity to whom it could be offered; and the Holy Spirit's *power* was nothing but a vague, baseless influence that did not lean on a Mediator.

When Praxeas introduced the opinion that Father, Son, and Holy Ghost were but different names for one and the same Person, Tertullian, in a treatise that has come down to us, assailed it with the utmost vehemence, and so far influenced the person who originally taught the theory at Carthage, that for a time at least he was brought to a recantation. The error soon broke out anew, and spread over² the whole Libyan Pentapolis, the territory adjacent to Tripoli, to such an extent that, according to the statement of Athanasius, the Son of God was scarcely preached in the Churches of that district.

269

Dionysius, Bishop of Alexandria, warned the leaders of that speculation to desist from propagating such opinions, answered inquiries, and wrote letters to reclaim the Libyan bishops. And when they persisted in propagating their Unitarian opinions, he prepared a dogmatic treatise in which he brought out the personal distinctions of the Godhead, and the necessity of asserting them, though with such a want of due caution as laid him open to assault. Nor can all the vindication with which Basil and Athanasius have too generously shielded and defended him from those charges of Arianizing, which were made against his statements, exempt him from merited blame. He prepared an explanation in consequence of the remonstrances sent to him by Dionysius of Rome, which restored him to the confidence of the Church, and to the reputation of orthodoxy. Sabellius was excommunicated in A.D. 261; an act of discipline that went far to check his opinions, and to bring back the Church to the two ideas of Trinity and unity.

One fact presents itself to our notice in all these discussions. Whenever an error arose on the subject of the Trinity in the Ante-Nicene Church, we find that the Fathers uniformly appeal to the baptismal formula. That was regarded as the secret of their strength; and it carried weight with ordinary Christians as well as theologians. Thus Tertullian, in his address against Praxeas, proves that Christ required His disciples to baptize into the Trinity and not into one of them (*ad singula nomina in personas singulas tingimur*). There was no possibility of resisting the emphatic language of that sacramental formula, of which the express purport was that it must run distinctly in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Tertullian adduced, with not less force, an argument from the passages which refer to the mission of the Comforter, as affording the clearest proof of a Trinity in unity. It was against the Sabellians that the Church introduced the term PERSON in the ecclesiastical acceptance which it has ever since

¹ See Stillingfleet on the Trinity.

² See Stillingfleet on the Trinity.

retained. Athanasius emphatically declared that he abhorred Sabellianism equally with Arianism.¹

The special controversy, however, on the DIVINE PERSONALITY of the Holy Spirit began with Arianism in the fourth century. SABELLIANISM and ARIANISM were more closely connected than at first sight appears. With an apparent antagonism, but an inner bond of connection, they acted on each other with a reciprocal influence, producing and being produced.

271

Arius, teaching presbyter of Alexandria, would solve the mystery in an opposite way from that which Praxeas and Sabellius had adopted. Living in the heart of the Sabellian district at Alexandria, Arius saw that the Sabellian theory was untenable; that it gave no explanation of the pre-existence and creative agency of the other Persons of the Godhead, and of their connection with the Old Testament generally (A.D. 318).

The Rationalistic bias of Arius' mind appeared in this, that he would not allow distinct personality and co-ordinate rank to the three Persons named in the baptismal formula. He would destroy the Trinity in unity *by laying stress on the subordination* of the second and third Persons — which, so far as a certain order of action is concerned, the Church teachers never scrupled to admit — *and by denying their consubstantiality*. He held the relation of the Son and Spirit to be nothing more than a created relation, and he thus showed that his mind was swayed and dominated, as Sabellius' was, by the theory of a unipersonal God. He vehemently contended that Deity and derivation from another person involved contradictory ideas. The numerous arguments propounded by Arius, and especially by Eunomius — who was by far the ablest of the Arians — as these are stated and referred to by Athanasius, Basil, and Gregory Nazianzen, may all be reduced to two — that the same ETERNITY and the same INDEPENDENCE cannot possibly be possessed by a person who is OF or FROM another. There Arius paused, and resolutely adhered to the mere dictates of his own reason. He maintained as the only warrantable explanation, that the Father originated the Son by the *fiat* of creation, and that the Holy Spirit was but the creature of a creature. He dismissed in the most abrupt way the whole

¹ Nothing strikes the inquirer more than the eager desire evinced by the modern Unitarians to appeal to the early Fathers negatively or positively. Fond as they are of declaring that they stand on the shoulders of the Fathers and Reformers, they find it necessary to consider this early testimony, however little it serves their cause. The attempt of Sand, the Arian, to make the early Fathers speak his sentiments, was exposed by Wittichius in his *causa Spiritus sancti*, 1678, and by Bishop Bull. The groundless statements of Curcellreus received merited chastisement from the hand of Stillingfleet. The more cautious appeal to the Fathers by Dr. Samuel Clarke was sufficiently met by Waterland, Hurriion, Abraham Taylor, and others. The bold statements of Priestley, on a subject where his information was far from extensive or correct, received the most overwhelming refutation from Velingius, Segaar, and Gavel in Holland, and from Bishop Horsley in this country. One, of the effective treatises on the subject is Burton's testimonies of the Ante-Nicene Fathers to the doctrine of the Trinity and *of the divinity of the Holy Ghost*, 1831. In the face of all this evidence, Dr. Lamson, a Unitarian writer of some reputation, in his work, *The Church of the First Three Centuries* (Boston 1860), announces this as the conclusion to which he has come: "The modern doctrine of the Trinity is not found in any document or relic belonging to the Church of the first three centuries. Letters, art, usage, theology, worship, creed, hymn, chant, doxology, ascription, commemorative rite, and festive observance, so far as any remains, or any record of them is preserved coming down from early times, are, as regards this doctrine, an absolute blank." Whether that representation is ignorance or reckless misstatement I shall not take it upon me to decide — probably both. Baur's elaborate work, in three elaborate volumes, *Die Christliche Leltre von der Dreieinigkeit und Menschwerdung Gottes in ihrer geschichtlichen Entwicklung*, is very far from being a reliable history of the doctrine, not because he intended to be unfair, but because he makes for the various writers a system which never had any existence except in his own brain. The three erudite volumes always remind me of what Schiller said playfully of himself, but which may be gravely said of Baur: "Ich werde immer eine Schlechte Quelle für den Geschichtsforscher seyn, der Unglück hat sich an mich zu wenden. Die Geschichte ist überhaupt ein Magazin für meine Phantasie und die Gegenstände müssen sich gefallen lassen was sie unter meinen Händen Werden."

array of Biblical evidence, which goes to prove that the divine essence, numerically one, is possessed in common by Father, Son, and Spirit.

272

It is stated, both by Epiphanius and Augustin, on evidence that seems liable to no suspicion, that Arius regarded the Holy Ghost as a creature of the Son, that is, as the creature of a creature; because, according to his beliefs, the Son of God occupied no higher position than that of a creature. It does not appear, however, that Arius at first openly assailed the Deity of the Spirit. At least Alexander of Alexandria, in the letter which he sent to the bishops of the Christian Church expressly recording the erroneous views of Arius and of his followers, makes no mention of this point. And the Nicene Creed, directly intended to refute his opinions, contains nothing more on the Holy Spirit than the simple statement which had been confessed in the Church from the beginning: "I believe in the Holy Ghost." If we compare the several statements that have come down to us, we may warrantably conclude that, at the commencement of his career, Arius, having no direct occasion to express his sentiments on the Holy Spirit, and being challenged ecclesiastically only for his avowed opinions on Christ's Deity, was content for a time to let the controversy be carried on in connection with the topics which gave rise to it; and that it was only at a later date, when pressed by arguments and demands that summoned him to declare himself explicitly and without evasion, that his error on the Holy Spirit, at least in its full extent, was at length brought to light. This is confirmed by what is recorded in connection with Athanasius' disputation with him. During the sitting of the Council of Nice, Athanasius held a disputation with Arius, and in the course of that discussion Arius declared without concealment or evasion his belief that the Holy Spirit was but a creature. We are further told that the proof which he adduced was the weakest that can be conceived, viz. that the Father sent the Paraclete from heaven, and that all things were made by Christ (Joh 1.3), leaving the inference to be deduced that He was among the creatures that Christ created.

273

We come to the remarkable period between the First and Second General Council (A.D. 325-381), a period memorable for the great men who appeared in it, but equally memorable for the fundamental errors that agitated and distracted men's minds, and for the indecision, uncertainty, and unsettled opinion on the work and agency of the several Persons of the Godhead. After the divine Sonship of Christ had been asserted, the next fifty years may be described as a chaotic period, when men's minds were in many quarters perplexed and bewildered on the subject of the Holy Spirit's divine personality. It was only by slow and measured steps that the opinion of the Church on the doctrine of the Holy Spirit — under the guidance of her living Head — came to acquire consistency and calm rest. But she had to pass through a fiery trial

The principal assailants of the Deity of the Spirit were the Macedonians (πνευματόμαχοι), called also Semi-Arians, because they denied the Deity of the Holy Ghost, even while they admitted the divine dignity of the Son. The founder of this sect was Macedonius, a man in no way venerable, who obtained the episcopal dignity by bloodshed, and who, after an unworthy occupancy of the post for a year, was ejected from it amid sedition and turmoil. It was after his deposition that he propounded his heresy, which consisted in denying the Spirit's Deity, and in proclaiming Him to be a mere creature, though it does not appear that he and his followers had arrived at any firm opinion as to the created nature, angelic or super-angelic, which ought to be ascribed to Him. The grounds on which the Macedonians assailed the Deity of the Holy Spirit were much the same with those which the Unitarians have urged in more recent times, but scarcely with the amount of ingenuity and plausibility which the latter have displayed.

Before the Second General Council was assembled, the arguments of the Macedonians (πνευματόμαχοι) were fully confuted by Athanasius, Basil, Gregory Nazianzen, Gregory Nyssen.

274

They drew out the proof for the Deity of the Holy Spirit, much in the same way as they had used in establishing the supreme Deity of the Son, by texts ascribing DIVINE DIGNITY, OMNIPOTENCE, OMNIPRESENCE, and OMNISCIENCE to Him, and especially from THE BAPTISMAL FORMULA, because a creature could not be put into the formula as of co-ordinate rank with the Father and the Son. And Athanasius brings out that the Father works all BY the Son IN the Holy Spirit.

In the strangely agitated period which preceded the calling of the Second General Council, the part which Basil acted was that of concession and of moderate demands. He was content if, in the eager efforts which were put forth to reclaim the Semi-Arians, they could be brought to declare that the Holy Spirit was not a creature, even though they did not take the positive ground of asserting His supreme Deity. To some, Basil's action has always, down from his own time to this day, seemed to argue the character of a trimmer; to others, it seems the part of a wise Church leader. His maxim was as follows: "Union will take place if we adapt ourselves to the weak, and do not provoke the minds of men. As many speak against the Holy Ghost, I request that you will reduce them as far as lies in your power to a small number. *They who confess that the Holy Ghost is not a creature*, receive into your society, in order that the blasphemers alone may be left; and either reduce them to the truth by shame, or, if they remain in their sin, attach no more weight to the insignificant number. Let us require nothing further; let us lay before them the Nicene Confession, and if they assent to it, let us ask them to call the Holy Ghost not a creature. He who confesses this, let him be received into the Church. I think we should require no more" (*Epist.* 113.).

275

Some ecclesiastics to whom Basil's conduct 'was an enigma and a cause of anxiety made representations to Athanasius regarding it; and the letters in reply which have come down to us sufficiently attest that Athanasius entirely approved of the measures which Basil had taken. "I wonder," said Athanasius, "at the audacity of those who presume to reproach our beloved Bishop Basil, the true servant of God." "They may be assured," says he again, in writing to Palladius, "that he is the glory of the Church, a combatant for the truth, and a teacher of the needy; they must not fight against such a man." "He is I am fully convinced, weak to the weak, that he may gain the weak."

To show the state of that agitated transition period, a few facts may be added. Basil tells us that some held the Holy Spirit to be neither lord nor servant, but free (ἐλεύθερος). Basil himself distinguishes the Spirit from the creature as follows: "The creature serves; but the Spirit makes free. The creature needs life; but the Spirit is the quickener. The creature needs instruction; but the Spirit is the teacher. The creature is sanctified; but the Spirit is the sanctifier. Though you name angels, archangels, and all the super-mundane powers, they have their holiness by the Spirit." Basil says: "The Holy Spirit is of God, not as all things are, but as *proceeding out of God* (προελθών)." And yet this eminent man, with not a few of the orthodox of that period, while fully believing in his own mind the supreme Deity of the Spirit, abstained for the sake of peace, and to avoid giving offence, from insisting on calling Him God

Athanasius also, in his epistle to Serapion, writing against the Semi-Arians or Pneumatomachi, says in reference to those who make the Holy Spirit a creature: "Is it not madness, then, to say that the Spirit is a creature? For if He were a creature, He would not have been ranked in the Trinity, the whole of which is our God." He, in the same epistle, strongly urges that the Holy Spirit is in God (ἐν θεῷ), and that a creature is outside the divine essence (ἐξωθεν τῆς τοῦ θεοῦ

οὐσίᾳς). He lays out the whole strength and energy of his powerful mind to demonstrate how much the Spirit transcends every predicate of creaturehood, calling Him “the sanctifying and illuminating life.”

276

During the continuance of that Semi-Arian or Macedonian controversy, which was as long as it was saddening and paralyzing, many were completely unsettled and at a loss what to hold. Thus Gregory Nazianzen states (Or. 37): “Some say that the Holy Spirit is a mere energy; others that He is a creature; and others that He is God. And some will not affirm that He is any of these, out of reverence for the Scriptures, which, according to them, do not clearly indicate which of these He is. And they neither do Him honour nor dishonour, but are very much in the position of men who are indifferently affected toward Him. Some,” he proceeds, “acknowledged that a ternary must be understood in our religion, but they so widely distinguished the Persons from each other as to make one of them infinite in substance and in power; the other infinite in power, not in substance; and the third circumscribed in both.”

For such a condition of things the definitions of the Council of Constantinople in A.D. 381 offered a mental relief and satisfaction that could not be expressed. The weary and agitated mind of Christendom — on which such distracting controversies had been let loose — welcomed the repose. The decision given by that Council — and which at once entered into the universal creed of Christendom — was singularly calm and measured. It was appended as a mere addition to the Nicene Creed, neither inserting the term HOMOOUSIAN nor the words VERY GOD OF VERY GOD, which had been already applied to the Son, and leaving it to be inferred that they were equally applicable to the Holy Spirit. The addition made to the Nicene Creed on the Holy Ghost was simply the words: “THE LORD AND GIVER OF LIFE, WHO PROCEEDETH FROM THE FATHER, WHO, WITH THE FATHER AND SON TOGETHER. IS WORSHIPPED AND GLORIFIED, WHO SPAKE BY THE PROPHETS.”

277

The whole tenor of that invaluable addition to the Nicene Creed furnishes a clear though indirect proof that the Macedonian error, against which it was meant to be directed, denied the supreme Deity of the Holy Spirit. It does not appear what sort of created nature was ascribed to the Spirit by that heresiarch. But the refutation, which is contained in the simple enumeration of these positive predicates, is the most complete that could have been devised. Some, indeed, from an inadequate apprehension of its scope and aim, have expressed surprise that in a creed expressly prepared against a heresy that represented the Holy Spirit as a creature, the framers of the article did not in so many words designate Him God. Others, putting a construction upon the tenor of the article from what they know of Basil's mode of action, have conjectured that the assembled Fathers abstained from the use of the term GOD as applied to the Spirit, in order to avoid offence, because the heretics could not endure the application of the term God to the Spirit. Petavius appeals to Gregory Nazianzen's confession as regards his friend Basil. There is no foundation for such a sinister view. Basil had died two years before; and the bishops assembled at Constantinople exercised — as the transactions of the council prove — an independent judgment in this matter. They prepared the Confession on the article of the Holy Spirit in terms directly antagonistic to Macedonius' error and completely subversive of his opinions. A few words will suffice to show this.

1. Macedonius held that the Holy Spirit as a creature derived His life from Christ; and he based his argument on a false interpretation of the words in the preface of John's Gospel (Joh 1.3). We are told by Chrysostom, Epiphanius, Theophylact, and others, that Macedonius, in order to prove that the Holy Spirit received His life, like any other creature, from Christ, punctuated the

two verses in an incorrect way, thus: "All things were made by Him, and without Him was not anything made. That which was made in Him was life."

278

To obviate that misinterpretation, the framers of the Creed inserted the terms: "the Lord and Giver of life" (τὸ κύριον τὸ ζωοποιόν), intimating that He is Himself the source of life, and that it is He who imparts it in all its forms to others who stand related to Him as His creatures.

2. The Macedonians argued that if the Holy Spirit were true God, He must either be begotten or unbegotten; and as neither predicate is given to Him in Scripture, He must be held to be a creature. Against this argument the framers of the article inserted from Scripture the words: *who proceedeth from the Father* (τὸ ἐκ τοῦ πατρὸς ἐκπορευόμενον). Their intention was to show that the Holy Spirit might be true God without being either begotten or unbegotten, and that this was the peculiar style, according to Christ's own delineation, by which we are to mould our language in speaking of the personal subsistence of the Spirit, and through which we are to think our thoughts regarding Him.

3. The Macedonians, the assailants of the Spirit's Deity, commonly appealed, moreover, to an alleged fact, but which in reality had no foundation, viz. that the Scripture nowhere commands us to adore and worship the Holy Spirit. This was one of their chief arguments, as it has been the main argument of the Unitarians of subsequent times. And the Fathers of Constantinople expressly avowed the opposite in the words which they inserted: "Who, with the Father and the Son together, is worshipped and glorified" (τὸ συμπροσκυνούμενον καὶ συνδοξαζόμενον).

4. The last thing inserted was a point which, from the earliest times, the Christian Church had always adduced as a proof of the supreme Deity of the Spirit, and which was confessed in the first creeds, viz. that He spoke by the Old Testament prophets (τὸ λαλῆσαν διὰ τῶν προφητῶν). This was the last clause of the article inserted in the Constantinopolitan Creed.

279

Before proceeding with our historical sketch, two questions presented by the critical inquirer demand an answer.

It is asked: Why did not the First Council, THE NICENE COUNCIL, anticipate or preclude much of the painful dubiety which agitated men's minds during the interval between the two councils, by pronouncing in terms much more definite and express on the supreme Deity of the Holy Spirit? The reason was, that they could not fitly condemn an undeveloped error, which Arius, indeed, cherished in his heart at the time of the Council of Nice (for he regarded Him as a creature), but which had not been so publicly avowed as to become the subject of ecclesiastical action. Though the subsequent attack on the Spirit was but the natural and necessary consequence of the opinions which he entertained, the Fathers at Nice could neither speak of it as an actually existing error, nor act against it when it was but a possible heresy. As to their own belief in the Deity of the Spirit, that is evident enough from the three clauses of the Nicene Creed which relate to the Trinity.

A second question which has a plausible appearance, when taken in connection with the subsequent history, is: Why did the Fathers of the Second Council, the CONSTANTINOPOLITAN COUNCIL, declare the doctrine of the Spirit's procession in so defective a manner, merely saying: "who proceedeth from the Father"? The reason was, that the Semi-Arians or Macedonians, against whom the Council pronounced, maintained an error which rendered it necessary to use language which should neutralise and obviate that error, and which was of a nature entirely different from those subsequent debates on the procession of the Spirit which were carried on between the Oriental and Western Churches several centuries afterwards. With the Fathers at Constantinople the one question was, whether the Holy Spirit

was supreme God or a creature. It was not the later question, whether the Holy Spirit, CONFESSEDLY A DIVINE PERSON, proceeded from the Father, or from the Father and the Son (*filioque*).

280

If the Fathers at Constantinople would set forth sound orthodox doctrine in contrast with the new heresy, and so far only as the new heresy assailed it, it was necessary for them to affirm that He WAS GOD BECAUSE HE PROCEEDED FROM GOD, and received His essence from the Father by procession. This was what the Creed declared, viz. that He proceedeth from the Father, and was therefore true God, because by procession partaker of the Father's essence. On the contrary, the Macedonians or Semi-Arians had changed their ground. They had, as Arians, in the first step denied that the Son was consubstantial with the Father. Afterwards they held that all beyond the circle of the Father and the Son WAS A CREATURE OF THE SON, and consequently that the Holy Ghost was created by the Son. The Semi-Arians were thus obliged, according to their principles, to deny that the Holy Spirit proceeds immediately from the Father. That would involve His Deity and participation in the divine essence; and hence the Fathers of the Constantinopolitan Council felt it necessary to assert, and accordingly did assert, the opposite in the simple use of Christ's own words, which were held to be conclusive of the whole question: *who proceedeth from the Father* (Joh 15.26). But none of the great men who at that age adorned the Greek Church entertained any doubt that the Spirit proceeds not only from the Father, but from the Son. I do not anticipate the history of this discussion which agitated the Eastern and Western Church at a later day. But in connection with the peculiar expression of the Constantinopolitan Creed, "who proceedeth from the Father," it is only fitting and appropriate to remark — what all students of this remarkable period will admit — that the peculiar phrase employed in the Constantinopolitan Creed, enlarged at a later day by the addition of the *filioque* to meet the views of the West, and resolutely retained in its original form in the East — when

281

viewed in its true significance before that angry controversy began — was so expressed in order to meet the Semi-Arians, who wished to reduce the Spirit to the rank of a mere creature.

HISTORIC SURVEY OF THE DOCTRINE OF THE PROCESSION OF THE SPIRIT.

This expression means, according to the opinion of the Greek and Latin Fathers who employ it, that the Spirit receives His essence and personality from Him from whom He proceeds (Joh 15.26), just as the Son is said to receive His personality from the Father by whom He is begotten. The Son is from the Father alone, and on this account is called the Only-begotten of the Father; whereas the Holy Spirit, the Spirit of the Father and the Spirit of His Son (Gal 4.6), is warrantably held to have His essence and personality from both. Though it is nowhere expressly said in the Scripture that the Spirit proceeds from the Son, yet no one who submits his mind to the evidence supplied by many passages can doubt that the thought is diffused through the entire Biblical testimony on the subject. But as to THE HISTORY of the doctrine, we may affirm that there are three epochs, which may be identified with the three names of ATHANASIUS, THEODORET, and PHOTIUS, in Greek theology on the question before us.

In the FIRST EPOCH — that is, from the rise of Greek theology till the time of Epiphanius (403) — the received opinion, shared equally by the writers of the East and West, was that the Spirit proceeds from the Father and the Son.

Didymus, a monk of Alexandria, blind, but a man of extraordinary learning, composed a work in three books on the Holy Spirit, translated into Latin by Jerome, in which he writes: "Christ said of the Comforter, 'He will not speak of Himself, but shall receive of mine,' —

282

that is, because He is not of Himself, but of the Father and me — for His personality (*hoc enim quod subsistit*) *He has from the Father and me*” (Book II.). Epiphanius explicitly says: “If Christ is believed to be from the Father, God of God, so the Spirit is believed to be from Christ, or from them both” (τὸ δὲ πνεῦμα ἄγοιν παρὰ ἀμφοτέρω) (Anc. § 70, 71). Gregory Nyssen and Basil in like manner use the same language in various passages, as has been repeatedly proved by those who know their works, and who have always been profoundly struck by the fact that *the Greek Church never had any scruple in her best days*, and when she had her greatest divines in the fourth century, *in speaking of the procession of the Spirit from the Son* as well as from the Father. Athanasius says that “the Holy Spirit has the same order and nature in relation to the Son that the Son has to the Father” (*ad Serap.* § 21); “along with the Father, the Son is the fountain of the Holy Ghost” (*Ari.* § 9). These quotations, which might be indefinitely multiplied, leave no room to question the theological opinion of that first epoch in the Greek Church. Before we pass from this epoch we may adduce the words of Augustin as a witness in the Western Church to the same effect in those remarkable elucidations of the Gospel of John, which he has supplied in a series of 124: *tractatus*. In the 99th Exposition, taking up the procession of the Spirit with his usual profoundness, he declares again and again that it is both from the Father and Son; and he lays down a position which Anselm several centuries afterwards handled with consummate power, both in his oral discussion with the Greeks and in his treatise on the procession. Augustin asks: “If, then, the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father and the Son, why did the Son say: He proceedeth from the Father?” To that question he replies: “A quo autem habet Filius ut sit Deus (est enim de Deo Deus) *ab illo habet utique ut etiam de illo procedat Spiritus Sanctus: ac per hoc Spiritus Sanctus* ut etiam de Filio procedat sicut procedit de Patre, ab ipso habet Patre.”

283

Not only so: when Christ says, “who proceedeth from the Father,” it must be borne in mind that, according to the uniform tenor of Christ’s teaching, He refers all to the Father because He Himself, as the only-begotten Son, is of the Father, and thus He has it from the Father that the Spirit proceeds from Him, the Son.

The SECOND EPOCH in Greek theology, in which we find voices raised for the procession FROM THE FATHER ONLY, begins with the Council of Ephesus in A.D. 431. Theodore, in the creed drawn up by him, to which attention was directed by that Council, declared that the Holy Spirit did not receive His subsistence through the Son (οὐδὲ δὲ νιου νιάρξιν εἴληφος). Theodore qualified many things, and was permitted to close his career in the Church notwithstanding all the crude and divergent views to which he had given utterance. Not long afterwards, when Cyrill launched his anathematisms against Nestorius, he revived the subject by saying: “If anyone shall not confess that the Spirit by whom He wrought miracles was His own, let him be anathema.” To that Theodoret, the attached friend of Nestorius, replied in a defiant attitude: “That the Spirit is the Son’s own Spirit we shall confess and accept as a pious utterance, if he meant of the same nature and proceeding from the Father; but if he meant that He has His subsistence from the Son or by the Son (ὡς ἐξ υιοῦ ἢ δι’ υιοῦ τὴν ὑπάρξιν ἔχον), we repudiate it as blasphemous and impious” (Theod. on Cyrill’s Anathematisms). Though it is confessedly difficult to trace or conjecture the purpose which prompted that resolute attitude of THEODORET, he was the first who openly avowed that the Holy Spirit is not of the Son, nor by the Son, but from the Father only. The opinion was not at that time generally accepted or approved in Greek theology. Men were for a long time left to a free judgment upon the question.

284

Opinion was in process of being decidedly formed in the West, under the influence of Augustin, in favour of the procession from the Son as well as from the Father. We come to the controversy on the *filioque*, that is, the addition from the Father and the Son, which after centuries of polemical discussion ended in the permanent disruption of the Greek and Latin Church. The Western Church, in accordance with the views of Augustin, laid emphasis on the procession from the Father and the Son, and naturally wished to elevate the doctrine to confessional authority in the Creed. But how was that to be done? Instead of effecting it by a Council of the whole Church, the only competent way, and by a common understanding, it was introduced into the Nicaeno-Constantinopolitan Creed by the arbitrary and unauthorized addition of the *filioque* at the Council of Toledo, A.D. 589, under King Reccaredus, who had abandoned Arianism from an enlightened preference for the orthodox faith. From that time the third article of the Creed was always read and chanted in Spain, France, and Germany with this addition. When the Greeks became acquainted with this fact, they not unnaturally charged the Latins with the falsification of the Creed, and with an unwarrantable addition without the concurrence of the entire Christian Church. The Western Church had the truth, but their mode of action was unwarrantable. Instead of interpolating the Creed — which was the less unwarrantable from the fact that the clause so altered was expressed in the very words of Scripture — their proper course was to have taken another part of Scripture which ascribes the procession to the Son as well as to the Father. Had they, for example, inserted such a clause as this: “Who is the Spirit of the Son as well as of the Father,” and had an Ecumenical Council inserted it, they might possibly have forestalled the schism, or at least have removed the occasion. As it was, the action of the Latins cannot be vindicated.

285

For, though the doctrine that the Holy Ghost proceedeth from the Son as well as from the Father is undoubtedly well-founded, the Latins, instead of presuming to interpolate the Creed of the entire Church, should have recollected that the Nicaeno-Constantinopolitan Creed was everywhere accepted; that not a word could warrantably be altered without the general concurrence of the entire Church; and that such an arbitrary enlargement must be offensive to their Oriental brethren. The addition first made in Spain was generally received in the West, in France, Italy, and England. Leo III, however, who was raised to the Papal dignity A.D. 795-816, when appealed to for permission to insert the *filioque* in the repetition of the Creed, firmly refused, from the earnest desire which he always entertained to be in friendly relations with the Greek Church. To show how firm his purpose was — a purpose from which he was not to be moved even by Charlemagne, who defended the *filioque* — Leo caused the unaltered Creed to be engraved on a silver plate for the Church of St. Peter in Rome. But the addition had been made, and was not to be undone. The Churches in Spain, France, and elsewhere sung the Creed with this addition. What Pontiff was prevailed upon to permit the addition is not certain; for different writers have given different names. Petavius says correctly that it is not known by whom the concession was made. Nor did the preparation of the Athanasian Creed, as it was unwarrantably called, improve the matter. The opposite sentiment was diffused by it throughout all the East.

The controversy soon became A DOGMATIC ONE. The Greeks now actually began, as a body, to deny the procession of the Holy Spirit from the Son. And the acrimony as well as disingenuous artifices which speedily ensued from heated minds, the assumptions on the one side, and the violent antagonism on the other, form a sad chapter of ecclesiastical history. Not a few of the Greek writers, though they constantly rejected the phrase “procession from the Father AND the Son,” yet acknowledged “a procession from the Father

286

THROUGH the Son;” and they explained it sometimes in one way and sometimes in another way. But for the most part they would not admit that anything more was indicated than AN

ECONOMICAL RELATION or THE IDEA OF MISSION. Thus John Damascen puts the matter in the following way: “We believe in one Holy Spirit in all things like the Father and the Son — proceeding from the Father and *dispensed by* the Son” (*Orth. F. c.* 10).

What may be called THE THIRD EPOCH in Greek theology, took its rise with PHOTIUS, who wrote on the procession according to the current view of the Greek Church, and condemned as blasphemous the opinion entertained in the West (A.D. 867). He brought together all the arguments which could be adduced for his side of the question. But they are inferential, presumptuous, and little better than vain logic applied to a theme beyond the scope and application of mere logical deduction. This so offended the Latin Church, that the addition to the Creed, hitherto used only in Spain, France, and Germany, was now openly accepted everywhere. The division inevitably assumed the form of a schism about the year 1054. But a new necessity arose, of a national kind. Though there had always been individuals among the Greeks who had concurred in sentiment with the Western theology on the doctrine of the procession, a new element came into operation. The Greeks were harassed by the Turks on every side; and as it began to be apparent that the Eastern Empire could not for a long time support itself against these powerful and constantly advancing enemies without help from the West, they made eager and repeated requests for help. They sent ambassadors to the Council of Constance (1414-1418), and also to the Council of Basil (1431-1449), but they effected nothing. Only on one condition could help be accorded — that the Greeks should be reunited to the Western Church. To bring this about, every effort was used — from the effect of fear on the one side, and ambition on the other.

287

At length Eugenius IV called a council at a time when the Turks threatened to accomplish the overthrow of the Eastern Empire. To this council, known as the Council of Florence, which first met at Ferrara at the end of 1438, and was transferred to Florence in 1439), the Greek Emperor and the Patriarch of Constantinople anxiously repaired, in the vain hope of receiving help from the West. But they were required to accept the Western view of the procession, together with some points of Romish doctrine to which it is not necessary here more particularly to refer. These conditions were accepted under the pressure of necessity, when it was too late. But it may be useful to refer to the formula or article of union, as it serves to show the true position of the whole question which was disputed between the Churches. This formula, drawn up by Scholarius, afterwards called Gennadius, was as follows: “Since we Greeks hitherto supposed that the Latins affirmed that the Holy Ghost proceeds from the Father and the Son *as from two principles or by two spirations*, and did not affirm that *the Father is the fountain of Deity, viz. of the Son and Holy Spirit*, we with much aversion withdrew both from the addition made by the Latins to the Creed, and from their communion. But now, being by the singular grace of God assembled in this sacred and ecumenic synod in order to cement a sacred union between us, after many questions ventilated on both sides, after keen discussions and the adducing of many testimonies both from sacred Scripture and from the Church teachers, *we Latins* declare and profess that in our affirmation respecting the Spirit’s procession from the Father and the Son *we do not express it in the sense of excluding the Father from being the fountain and origin of the whole Deity* — that is, of the Son and Holy Spirit, or as if we believed that the Son received not from the Father that procession of the Spirit from the Son, or as if we held two principles or two spirations of the Holy Spirit; but we firmly believe and profess that the Holy Spirit from eternity proceeded from the Father and the Son as from one principle, and by one single spiration.

288

“And we Greeks in like manner assert and profess that *the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father*, but we also believe and affirm that it is the property of the Son *that the procession should also be from Him*, and that the spiration be from both, *viz. by the Father through the*

Son according to essence. And now in this unanimous profession we unite in a mutual union and join hands.”

This formula, drawn up in such circumstances, neither pleased all the Greeks nor all the Latins. The emperor subscribed, and the majority reluctantly followed, though some of the Greeks withdrew in disgust. And on returning to Constantinople the Greeks were ill received, more especially as the assistance promised by the Latins against the Turks was never sent. The whole proved a failure, and nothing was actually effected by all the negotiations of the council. Shortly afterwards Constantinople was taken by the Turks (A.D. 1453), the Greeks describing this as a divine judgment upon them for the Florentine Council. On the other hand, Bellarmine says that they were delivered to the Turks because of this error.

The Greek Church, notwithstanding the reluctant concession which was made by those who represented it at the Florentine Council, continued, after the fall of Constantinople, to assert, with not less vehemence than before, the position that the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father only. No probability exists that any change will be made by the Greek Church, or that any proposal of this sort will ever be calmly considered. The correspondence into which the Tübingen divines entered subsequently to the Reformation with the Greek patriarch, is of importance only as bringing out this fact. The sad fate of the Patriarch CYRILLUS LUCARIS, who had cordially accepted the distinctive doctrines of the Protestant Church, proves the same thing.

289

The formula which would have been accepted by him, that the Holy Spirit proceedeth from the Father through the Son (ὁ ἅγιος πνεῦμα), was at once branded with the stigma of heresy by the Council of Constantinople in 1642. Any attempt like that recently made at the Bonn Conference by Dr. Dollinger and some Anglican divines, in the line of the same formula, is only time and effort thrown away in vain negotiation.

We hold strongly the view of the Western Church, which was asserted and maintained by all the Churches of the Reformation; and it might be important, did space permit, to examine the various grounds by which the Greek Church seeks to confirm her opinion, and the replies which the Greek theologians have produced to the arguments of the Western theologians.¹ They mainly appeal to the fact that the Ecumenical Council of Ephesus prohibited (A.D. 431) as unlawful any further addition to the Nicaeno-Constantinopolitan Creed. They give no heed to the allegation of the Western Church, that the addition was only with a view to give a more precise explanation, and not to establish a new dogma. The constantly reiterated Greek reply is, Who gave the Latin Church the authority to alter the accepted Creed of universal Christendom?

The keen feeling entertained in the Greek Church since the days of Photius still continues. We find that, so late as the Encyclical issued in 1863 at Constantinople, the doctrine involved in the filioque is denounced as heresy. There is no doubt that the Greeks as a body abide in this opinion, and speak and write upon it as a point of capital importance, and as essential to their system of theology.

290

As to the importance of the doctrine from the Biblical point of view, this cannot be questioned. It will not accomplish anything to say, with Grotius, from the Indifferentist point of view, that the

¹ The arguments of the Greeks for their side of the question are given with great erudition and ingenuity by the Archbishop of Novogorod, Procopovitz, in his *Tractatus de Processione Spiritus Sancti*, 1772. Ernesti's erudite review of the book is replete with interest.

On the Latin side of the question, the most interesting historical work is Walch's *Historia de Processione*, 1751; Pfaffius' tractate on the same topic; and Sweet's *History of the Doctrine to the Death of Charlemagne*, 1876.

dispute is a mere logomachy. Its importance is such that it can neither be dropped nor ignored, though Protestant theologians, such as Pfaffius, Walchius, and others, who have fully traced the historic course of the controversy, admit that the dogma belongs to the least fundamental articles, and that it should not have disturbed the peace of the Greek and Latin Churches. At the same time, these writers assert that he who denies that the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of the Son, denies a truth, though the error may not exclude him from the hope of salvation. It is a delicate question: Was the error of the Greek Church of such a nature as to destroy the foundations of the faith?

Without entering into a sphere which, in truth, does not belong to man, we prefer to advert to the disastrous consequences of its ecclesiastical denial. Every one who has fully traced the course of this controversy historically, and perused the solid and massive literature on the subject from such men as ANSELM, ZANCHIUS, and others, or read LE QUIEN, or the collection of treatises compiled by LEO ALLATIUS, or still more recently the publications of PUSEY and others, called forth by the recent Bonn Conference, must feel how deeply the Greek Church has placed herself in the wrong by the attitude which she has taken up. She has acted under a one-sided and passionate feeling, which has operated to her detriment and loss as an ecclesiastical body. The unction and spirituality of the Church have been sadly affected to her disadvantage.

While calm inquirers must concede that unwise steps were taken by the Western Church, and that her course of action was marked all too evidently by precipitance and mistakes, we must declare with equal emphasis that the Latin Church brought out and gave due weight to a momentous truth which lies at the foundation of the whole mission of the Comforter: How could the Son send the Spirit if the Spirit were not His?

291

We might concede that the separation of the Eastern from the Western Church can scarcely be vindicated, if the separation hinged on this question alone. But there is another inquiry: Has not the denial of the *filioque*, which withdrew the Greek Church from the ground occupied in Athanasius' time by the whole Church in the East and West, operated to the deep injury of vital religion in the East? Has it not tended to subvert, in the general sentiment of the Greek mind, the deep ground on which the Lord Jesus, as Mediator, acts as the Dispenser of the Spirit, and as the Baptizer with the Holy Ghost and with fire? Has it not operated in an unsalutary way, in raising a barrier between the living Head of the Church and His people, considered as the habitation of God in the Spirit, and on the whole spiritual life of the Greek Church? Our conviction is, that it has done so. So calamitous, indeed, have been the practical results of denying the essential relation of the Spirit as the Spirit of the Son, that we cannot fail to perceive them. The Spirit, economically considered, is largely dispensed from the Son. And the Greek Church has become much of a fossil, untouched by any of the reformations or revivals that renovated the Western Church.

THE WORK OF THE SPIRIT.

Having sketched the course of opinion as to the Holy Spirit considered as A PERSON OF THE GODHEAD, we come in due course to consider the history of THE SPIRIT'S WORK as it was discussed and canvassed in Church history in connection with the doctrine of grace. There are various marked epochs to which we shall more particularly refer, such as the testimony given forth in the time of the Pelagian Controversy, and at the Reformation, and also in the Puritan period — of all which it may be affirmed that the clear and emphatic doctrine then declared on the Spirit's work was accompanied with a memorable revival of the spiritual life of the Church.

292

As it is by no means the aim of this survey to compile a *catena patrum*, or to discuss minutely the point raised by Arminian writers, such as Whitby and Bishop Tomline, how far the Christian writers, prior to Augustin, can be regarded as giving an explicit testimony to efficacious grace, but rather to notice the great turning-points in the history of opinion, we shall only touch the prominent questions as they arose.

There is a marked difference between the writers of the Greek and Latin Churches on the whole subject of the Spirit's work or on efficacious grace. From a very early period a different view prevailed on this mysterious subject. In the Eastern and Western Church the relation of human freedom to the agency of the Spirit was, in some measure, differently viewed. The chief emphasis was laid in the Eastern Church on the freedom of the will or free agency (τὸ αὐτεξούσιον); and they spoke of a self-determining power in man even in his fallen state. On the other hand, the chief emphasis was laid in the Western Church on the extent of corruption and the power of sin. This difference between the Oriental and Western Church was at a very early period strongly marked; and we cannot fail to notice the germs of that peculiar historical development which gave such a different aspect to them both. The Eastern Church, neglecting to elaborate an anthropology which gave due prominence to sin, and carried away with an airy notion of metaphysical liberty unduly derived from the speculations of the Greek philosophy, wasted its strength in vindicating for man what can never be asserted in regard to him without a misconception of the ruin occasioned by the fall. The pillars of orthodoxy in the Oriental Church maintained a sort of synergism of the human will along with the agency of the divine Spirit. They ascribed to man, in his present fallen state, a choice between good and evil, and a co-operation on man's part in the application of redemption. But in elevating human power they diminished natural corruption. The Western Church was led into a far other path, and penetrated far more deeply into the doctrine of man's corrupt and fallen condition.

293

The Greek Fathers are defective, though it must be conceded in justice to them that the vehement urgency with which they set forth free-will, was primarily due to their dread of the determinist or fatalistic theories of the Gnostics and Manichees, with whom they were surrounded. Even where the Greek Fathers set forth man's corruption and the agency of the Spirit, as is done more or less by Cyrill of Jerusalem, Gregory Nazianzen, Basil, and his brother Gregory Nyssen, they also maintain, in terms much too strong for a Biblical theologian, the power of the free-will. Thus Chrysostom puts the matter: "God draws, but He draws the willing one" (ἐλκει μὲν θεός ἐλκει δὲ βουλόμενον). That defective statement was only too characteristic of the entire body of Greek theology. They never attempted to solve the question, or to remove the seeming antinomy between divine grace and free-will.

The discussions in the Western Church referred more to the ruin and the remedy; and they both indicated the existence of a deeper spiritual life as well as increased it. The discussions in the Western Church attest that there prevailed far more profound views as to the continued operation of the Spirit on the heart. In effecting this result Augustin was, in the course of Providence, specially trained and prepared. He rendered a great service at a critical time to the whole Church. For some time subsequent to his conversion, he was not more advanced than the writers of the Greek Church, and even less matured on the subject of grace than Ambrose. His first treatise on free-will (A.D. 388-395), which has come down to us, was meant to refute the Manichaean doctrine to which he was once attached; and it is certainly very defective. He intended it to counteract the dogma that man only acts under constraint, and from a necessity which renders it impossible for him to keep from vice and sin. He imperfectly explains himself in reference to the operation of divine grace, but by no means in antagonism to grace, as Pelagius did.

294

About the time, however, when he received the episcopate, a decisive change took place in Augustin's opinions (A.D. 396). The Scripture text which was made the means of leading his mind to the decisive change, which he ever afterwards asserted, was: "Who maketh thee to differ? what hast thou that thou didst not receive? Now, if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory as if thou hast not received it?" (1Cor 4.7). The conclusion to which he came was, that "in conversion God out of the unwilling makes willing ones, and dwells in those made willing;" and at a later day, when reviewing and correcting the sentiments to which he had given circulation by his pen, so far as they needed correction, we find him saying: "I have erred in having maintained that the grace of God consists only in God's revealing of His will in the declaration of truth; but that to *give assent to the preached gospel is our own work*, and that this lies in our power." And again: "I have erred in asserting *that it lies within our power to believe the gospel and to will*, but that it is the work of God to give those who believe and those who will the power of operating." Now, all was ascribed by him to the grace and Spirit of God, and nothing to man's natural power; and with marked precision the doctrine which he held was brought out in the prayer which called forth in Pelagius' mind the keenest antagonism and the greatest repugnance: "Lord, give what Thou commandest, and command what Thou wilt" (da quod jubes et jube quod vis).

Augustin was thus mentally and spiritually prepared when the Pelagian error broke out. He took its measure from the first, and at once directed all the energy of a great mind to counteract every position which was laid down in vindication of the Pelagian dogma, which found only too prepared a soil both in the West and in the East, and which it was now imperatively necessary for the welfare of vital Christianity resolutely to refute and overthrow. The error which Pelagius

295

maintained was that free-will is able by its own natural powers, *without the aid of the Holy Spirit*, to convert itself to God, to believe the gospel, and to be obedient to the law of God with the whole heart, and thus, with its own voluntary obedience, to merit the remission of sins and eternal life.

The great powers of Augustin were called forth by the Pelagian controversy. His real aim was to prove and to assert the inward operations of the Holy Spirit on the heart in conversion and in every religious act; and the controversy, bespeaking as it does the remarkable illumination of Augustin's mind by the Holy Spirit, was accompanied and followed by results which have pervaded Western Christianity more or less to this day. Of Augustin himself, in whom we see these opinions vitally represented, we may say that subsequently to the reception of those views in which his mind found its resting-place, his whole life was a hymn of praise to the Spirit's saving grace, and a prayer for new communications of the Spirit of Life. In all that bears on man's relation to the Trinity, this remarkable man may be regarded as the meeting-place where the streams of the past united, and were sent forth anew to fertilize the future. Doctrinal truth on Roman soil reached its culminating point in him; and whatever afterwards attained doctrinal importance, was in some way derived from the works of Augustin.

Pelagius, like all natural men, however cultured, only mistook the things of the Spirit of God. His first principle was free-will. And as to original sin, it was not in his system. He asserted that Adam's fall injured his posterity only by the ill example; that grace facilitated that which could be done without it; that nothing has moral significance which does not proceed from an act of free-will; and that it was absurd to hold that an innate perversity preceded every single act. His conception of the human will was that it was always in a state of perfect equilibrium or indifference between good and evil, and that it returns as with a bound from any sinful action to the same equipoise.

296

He deemed it self-contradictory to speak of *an evil bias or a tendency to sin, which is already sin*. And in affirming, as he did, that the will turns with equal ease to good or evil, *he made sin consist in actions merely, not in the nature*. Such views of sin obscured, all due perception of the great truth that the Holy Spirit must communicate a new life and anticipate the acts of the will, and heal it of its disease and of the deep inherent ground of evil which is in it since the fall of man. In a word, there is nothing in Pelagius' utterances that give the impression that he was a regenerate man drawn by a holy longing or aspiration toward God. The central thought of Scripture, that man was made in the divine image, and the temple of the Spirit, was reduced to a flat external ethical code that prescribes single actions. The discussion began on Pelagius' side with well-meant moral earnestness. But he had no conception of the Holy Spirit's operations on the human heart. And when we inquire how an earnest moral nature like his, zealous against corruptions and worldly compromise, could be possessed with the pride, self-sufficiency, and elation which he betrays, the explanation is, that he was profoundly ignorant of man's natural condition, and of the indispensable necessity of the Spirit's regenerating grace. He had never comprehended Christ's words: "First make the tree good." He expected the tree to yield good fruit as it was. He had inadequate and *superficial views of sin*, having never penetrated into the true state of the heart. It must be mentioned, as some explanation — though it is no palliation — that the Greek Church from which he had drawn his general culture and all his theological opinions in his earlier career, was very superficial in all that sphere of doctrine and thought. So far as the Church had expressed her views in the Creed, Pelagius had embraced all the ecclesiastical doctrines on the Trinity and the Person of Christ and the Deity of the Holy Spirit. He stood where Basil and

297

Athanasius and the two Gregories had stood. The meaning which he attached to grace was the natural ability for good, the gift of the *posse*. He held *that the will and performance were all the man's own*, as if he had never read Paul's words (Phi 2.13); and that by the right use of human freedom man merited eternal life. Only when refuted by Augustin's arguments did he allow that grace took in, or was exercised about, the remission of sin. He allowed *no renewing influence on the will*, nothing but an external aid. Hence, in writing to Innocent of Rome, Augustin says: "Let him be sent for to Rome, and asked expressly what he means by the term GRACE; or let him explain his meaning by letter: and if he be found to affirm the ecclesiastical and apostolic truth, let him be fully absolved; and let us rejoice in him. For whether he calls grace free-will or remission of sins, or the precept of the law, he affirms none of those things which tend to conquer lusts and temptations *by the supply of the Holy Spirit which He who ascended to heaven has shed on us abundantly*."

These last words show in what sense Augustin used the term *grace*, in contrast with the opposite opinion of Pelagius. Nothing serves more to show the defective views of grace that prevailed in the Eastern Church, than the fact that Pelagius was acquitted in A.D. 415 at the two Synods of Jerusalem and Diospolis. The great Church-teachers of the East, while admitting man's natural sinfulness and the Spirit's agency, had continued for generations, as Augustin did in his early theological development, to assign the ultimate decision to the power of free-will. They never attempted to explain the two sides.

Augustin's system had become the direct antithesis of this. Pelagius laid all stress on man's free-will. Augustin laid all emphasis on divine grace, which he understood as the efficacious and ever-continued operation of the Holy Spirit shedding abroad the love of God in the heart. Not that he denied free-will, for he maintained that IT WAS ALWAYS FREE, BUT NOT

298

ALWAYS GOOD. His words in the third book *Hypognosticon* show how free-will was admitted in ordinary things: "We acknowledge," says he, "that in all men there is a free-will; for they all, indeed, have natural innate understanding and reason; not that they are able to act in things pertaining to God as to love and fear God from the heart, but only in external works of this life have they freedom to choose good or evil. By good I mean that which nature is able to perform, as to labour in the field or not, to eat, to drink, to visit a friend or not," etc.

The point which Augustin discussed was ORIGINAL SIN AND FREE-WILL, or the free-will after the fall of man. He proved that in and by the first man the nature of all was radically corrupted (in deterius mutata), and that we were all that one man (ille unus homo omnes fuerunt); that man was left to the freedom of his will, and by an act of abused freedom precipitated the race into the bondage of sin, from which no one can be freed but by the grace of God. He held that by an ill use of freedom man destroyed both himself and his free-will. But Augustin is always careful to draw a distinction between the nature or substance of man which is good and the vitiating taint which has defiled it (*Ench.* vi. chap. 10). With the fall from God freedom was lost. He did not assert that the will was lost or the power to will, but that the true *liberty of willing good* is lost, and in its place has come the *peccandi necessitas*, or inevitable course of sinning. Hence man can be called out of this state only by the grace of God's Spirit, which consists, according to him, not in the mere instruction of the understanding by truth, nor in the mere remission of sins, but in the renewing operations of the Holy Spirit, and in a new life of love. He describes it as creative, and as transforming the entire man (*Sp. et Lit.* iii.). He distinguishes this from everything proceeding from mere nature, and as the opposite of original sin, which, according to him, consists in evil desire (concupiscentia).

299

Of this evil desire, grace is the antithesis, consisting in holy love to God. One of Augustin's deeply spiritual remarks is, that grace anticipates the will (gratia praevenit voluntatem), and that we do not speak of God *as having given grace*, but in the present tense, AS GIVING GRACE — that is, ever giving it. Even the longing for grace is God's work (volentem praevenit ut velit, volentem subsequitur ne frustra velit).

And when we inquire how grace, or the Spirit, stands related to freedom, we find Augustin's answer expressed in words which have constantly been re-echoed in different forms by Anselm, Bernard, Luther, and Calvin — viz. that free-will is not made void, but established by grace (gratia sanat voluntatem, *Sp. et Lit.* xxx.). But he allowed that still there were remains of sin in the Christian. He says, in his refutation of Julian: "The law which is in our members is put away by regeneration, and yet remains in the flesh, which is mortal. It is put away — for the guilt is entirely remitted by the sacrament through which believers are born again; and yet it remains — for it produces evil desires against which the believer strives."

On the great question between the true doctrine of Christianity and the deistical religion of Pelagius, nothing can be more explicit than Augustin's testimony. Thus he says: "Neither doth a man begin to be converted or changed from evil to good by the beginnings of faith, unless the free and undeserved mercy of God work it in him. Let the grace of God, therefore, be so accounted of, that *from the beginnings of his conversion to the end of his perfection*, he that glorieth should glory in the Lord. Because, as *none can begin* a good work without the Lord, so none can perfect it without the Lord." And again: "It is certain that we will when we will, but He causes us to will who works in us to will" (*De Grat. et Lib. Arb.* chap. ii.). To the same effect all the writers speak who imbibed Augustin's sentiments. Thus Maxentius says: "We believe that the natural free-will is

300

able to do no more than to discern and desire carnal or worldly things, which may perhaps seem glorious with men, but not with God; but those things that belong to eternal life, it can neither think, nor will, nor desire, nor perform, *but only by the infusion and inward working of the Holy Ghost*, who is also the Spirit of Christ.” Fulgentius is not less explicit: “We have not received the Spirit of God because we believe, but that we may believe.”

Augustin’s unanswerable polemic had so fully discredited Pelagianism in the field of argument, that it could no longer be made plausible to the Christian mind. It collapsed. But a new system soon presented itself, teaching that man with *his own natural powers is able to take the first step toward his conversion*, and that this obtains or merits the Spirit’s assistance. Cassian, a Scythian by birth, and a scholar of Chrysostom, holding the rank of abbot in a Marseilles monastery, was the founder of this middle way, which came to be called Semi-PELAGIANISM, because it occupied intermediate ground between Pelagianism and Augustinianism, and took in elements from both. He acknowledged that Adam’s sin extended to his posterity, and that human nature was corrupted by original sin. But, on the other hand, he held a system of universal grace for all men alike, making the final decision in the case of every individual dependent on the exercise of free-will. The Massilians, as they were called from Cassian’s monastery, opposed and censured Augustin for permitting himself to be carried to the opposite extreme from Pelagius, and declared that he attributed too much to divine grace.

Their opinions, as we learn from the letter of Prosper to Augustin, and also from the letter of Hilary, were as follows: they held that the first movement of the will in the assent of faith must be ascribed to the natural powers of the human mind. This was their primary error. Their maxim was: “*it is mine to be willing* to believe, and it is the part of God’s grace to assist.” They asserted the sufficiency of Christ’s grace for all, and that every one, according to his own will, obeyed or rejected the invitation, while God equally wished and equally aided all men to be saved.

301

Prosper, in his theological poem, *de ingratis*, a term which he applies to these men, brings this out with much force. Cassian held that man’s moral power for good is only weakened and enfeebled, but not dead, and that he has still such a sense of his disease that he can desire a cure (*voluntas medicum quaerens*). The entire system thus formed is a half-way house containing elements of error and elements of truth, and not at all differing from the Arminianism which, after the resuscitation of the doctrines of grace by the Reformers, diffused itself in the very same way through the different Churches. Semi-Pelagianism represented conversion as proceeding partly from man’s free-will and partly from divine grace. It puts them in juxta-position, and the adherents of the system were some of them more inclined to the one side, or to Pelagianism, while others inclined more to the Augustinian view. It satisfied neither.

Augustin, who had triumphantly refuted Pelagianism, received intelligence of what was taking place at Marseilles from his faithful Gallic scholars, Prosper and Hilary, and proceeded without loss of time to direct attention to the new phase of error. He was soon, however, to be removed from the scene of conflict to his everlasting rest. But he had the opportunity in his treatises on “Predestination,” and on “The Gift of Perseverance,” to prove that this half-and-half system was untenable, and in the last degree mischievous. He showed that it must lead men back to Pelagianism, if the orthodox faith was not accepted from the heart. Cassian, with a view to secure a place for the merit of works, had affirmed *that man begins the work of salvation*, and then receives as a reward further grace and aid in the path on which he has entered. It was easy to expose this unscriptural position, which led back the mind to the Pelagian depreciation of divine grace.

302

Augustin appeals to the text which had given rest to his own mind (1Cor 4.7), and also to Paul's statements elsewhere (Rom 11.35; 2Cor 3.5). He shows them that their position implied that they *would merit grace* by attributing to man the first commencement. He showed, moreover, the folly of a dogma which ascribed to man the most difficult thing — the commencement of a new spiritual life, and left to God's Spirit the easier task of merely conferring an aid or assistance afterwards.

The principal error of the Semi-Pelagian system consisted in the fact that *grace was said to be given according to men's merits* — that is, according to the good use or right improvement of the natural power of free-will. But grace was often used by them to intimate nothing more than the law and the prophets. After a century of discussion the inner contradiction of Semi-Pelagianism became apparent, and at the Synod of Orange (A.D. 529) it was repudiated in a series of positions or doctrinal statements, which may be said not only to have given this heresy a decisive check, but to have exhibited the truth with a precision, accuracy, and fulness than which we have scarcely anything more condensed and valuable on this topic in the whole compass of theological literature. Though it was but a provincial Synod, *it came to have all the validity of an Ecumenical Council*. It puts together the results of the whole previous discussions on Pelagianism and Semi-Pelagianism, and has the further advantage of being specially directed to the divine operation in the matter of regeneration. I shall subjoin the first seven CANONS of this memorable Synod, as containing the soundest and most scriptural utterances on this momentous topic: —

“1. If any man affirm that the whole man in soul and body has not been corrupted by Adam's transgression, but that the body only is subject to corruption, while the freedom of the soul remains unhurt, that man, seduced by Pelagius' error, contradicts the Scripture, which says: 'The soul that sinneth, it shall die.'

303.

“2. If any man affirm that Adam's transgression only injured himself, but not his posterity, or that only corporeal death, the punishment of sin, but not sin itself, which is the death of the soul, passed by one man to the entire human family, he ascribes injustice to God, contradicting the apostle (Rom 5.12).

“3. If any man say that the grace of God is given at man's petition, but not that grace produces the supplication, he contradicts the prophet Isaiah, who says, and the apostle who says the same: 'I am sought of them who asked not after me: I am found of them who sought me not' (Isa 65.1).

“4. If any man affirm that God waits for our will that we may be purged from sin, and does not confess *that it is due to the infusion and operation of the Holy Ghost* upon us that we desire to be cleansed, he resists the Holy Ghost Himself, who says that the will is prepared by God; and the apostle's testimony, that it is God who worketh in us both to will and to do of His good pleasure.

“5. If anyone say that the beginning or increase of faith, and the very movement of mind toward faith by which we believe in Him that justifies the ungodly, and come to the regeneration of baptism, is in us not by the gift of grace — that is, *by the inspiration of the Holy Ghost*, correcting our will from unbelief to faith, from ungodliness to piety — but by nature, he is proved an enemy to the doctrine of the apostles, as Paul says: 'He that hath begun a good work in you will perform it to the day of Jesus Christ;' and again: 'To you it is given in Christ not only to believe, but also to suffer for His sake' (Phi 1.6, 29). They who affirm that the faith by which we believe in God is natural, describe all who are estranged from the Church as in a manner believers.

“6. If any man affirm that mercy is imparted to us when, without the grace of God, we believe, will, desire, endeavour, watch and labour, pray, seek and knock, and does not confess

304

that it is of the inspiration and infusion of the Spirit of God that we can believe, will, or do any of all these things as we ought — who merely affirms that the aid of grace is added to the humility and obedience of man, and does not confess that our obedience and humility is a gift of His grace — he contradicts the apostle, who says: ‘What hast thou that thou hast not received?’ and: ‘By the grace of God I am what I am.’

“7. If any man affirm that he can by the strength of nature think anything good pertaining to the salvation of eternal life, as he ought, or choose or consent to the saving or evangelical preaching, *without the illumination and inspiration of the Holy Spirit*, who gives to all the sweet relish in consenting to and believing the truth, he is deceived by a heretical spirit, not understanding the word of God in the gospel: ‘Without me ye can do nothing;’ and that saying of the apostle: ‘Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think anything as of ourselves’ (2Cor 3.5):’

A historical succession of testimonies to the same effect might be supplied from Maxentius, Fulgentius, Albinus, Gregory the Great, and others, which would be found to be equally clear and interesting. But as the object of this sketch is only to notice the salient points of history, I shall refrain from entering into these details, and content myself with quoting a few words of the treatise “on the calling of the Gentiles,” of which Leo has been supposed by many to be the author, though the writer in reality is unknown. After saying that it would be ruinous to be deprived of the Holy Spirit, the writer adds: “He” [the Spirit] indeed, in the essence of the Deity, is everywhere and all-comprehensive, but is conceived in a certain manner to recede from those whom He ceases to govern. And *the cessation of His aid is to be regarded as His absence*, which that man madly thinks useful to himself who rejoices in his good actions, and thinks that he rather than God hath wrought them.

305

The grace of God must therefore be owned in the fullest and most unqualified sense, the first office of which is that His help be felt: “We have not received,” says the apostle, “the Spirit of the world, but the Spirit of God, that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.” Whence, if any man think that he has any good things of which God is not the author, but himself, he *has not the Spirit of God, but of the world*, and swells with that secular wisdom of which it is written: “I will destroy the wisdom of the wise.”

A long intervening period followed, during which ecclesiastical opinion, with many fluctuations of a downward tendency, was still publicly controlled by the Canons of the Synod of Orange. That much was done in defence of the doctrines of grace by the writers whom I have already mentioned as opposed to Semi-Pelagianism, and tending effectually to counteract the efforts of Cassian, Faustus, Vincentius Lorinensis, and the like, and to discredit the Semi-Pelagian views, cannot be questioned. But it is too evident that pure Augustinianism was by no means accepted in every quarter. We see this in the fate of Godeschal, and in other incidents of a like nature.

We come next to Bernard, who strenuously asserted Augustin’s views, and who in virtue of doing so became one of the most powerful characters that shed an ennobling influence on the mediaeval Church. Bernard’s treatise ON GRACE AND FREE-WILL is singularly fresh and accurate, and his age, as Neander has well pointed out, was a new spring-time of spiritual life after a long winter. At the beginning of the twelfth century a new creative epoch entered, and a new outpouring of the Holy Ghost, when religion, though still mingled with foreign elements, decidedly revived among the nations. Bernard was the representative of that mystic or pectoral theology which runs through the mediaeval period wherever it shows spiritual elements. The

stream of religious thought may be said to have divided in two from his time, the one more scholastic, the other more mystic.

306

The definitions and distinctions supplied by Bernard are often of the happiest. Thus he says: "Simply to will comes from man's nature; to will wickedly comes from corrupt nature; to will well, from supernatural grace." Another passage from his treatise on grace and free-will is as follows: "You say, *What, then, is it that free-will does? I answer briefly, It is made whole* (salvatur). Take away free-will, and there will be nothing to be healed. Take away grace, and there will be no healing influence (non erit unde salvetur). This work cannot be effected without the two — the one the cause by which it is accomplished, the other the subject on which, or in which, it is accomplished. God is the author of salvation: free-will is only capable of receiving it (tantum capax)."

The transition-stage between Bernard and the epoch of the Reformation was the period of mediaeval mysticism. This mystic theology, influenced as it was by vivid views of the Holy Spirit, may be said to have moved on a twofold hinge — on the sense of sin, blindness, inability, and defilement on the one hand; and on the great deliverance from all parts of moral and spiritual ruin, which is hourly to be found from Christ's Spirit, on the other. Introverting its regards, this school of theology occupied itself with the personal Redeemer, and with the restoration of light, life, and holiness by the Holy Spirit. The centre round which this whole theology moved was fellowship of life with the Redeemer through the Holy Ghost; and it was destined to scatter the seed, and prepare the way for the clearer views of the Reformation epoch. It may be said that the mystic element, though insufficient of itself to give rise to a general reformation, stands connected with almost every true revival or great religious movement that has ever taken place. In some cases, it goes before as an indispensable preliminary. In others, it comes in as a tributary stream, or as a necessary complement when a movement threatens to decay. The labours of the older mystics — Eckart, Tauler, à Kempis, Wessel, and the author of the

307

Theologia Germanica — stood in a definite relation to the full development of Christian doctrine at the Reformation. The felt distance from God, the deep solitude of their hearts, their desires for the present enjoyment of God as their proper element — these and similar, feelings awakened by the Holy Spirit were uttered by these writers in mystic language, and from a mystic point of view; but they served to some considerable extent to rescue a large class from the terrible infliction of ecclesiastical form or a mere dead orthodoxy. But the mystic element which limits its regards to CHRIST IN US, and which fails to give prominence to Christ's merits FOR US, never of itself produced a widespread renovation of spiritual life. It was ignorant of the liberty derived from imputed righteousness — that is, was ignorant of the true ground and indispensable condition of the communication of the Spirit, and of all filial communion with God. And it bears, when it stands alone, the elements of decay and deterioration in itself. But the great witnesses of free grace and of Christ's merits and atonement, whether we think of one period or another — such as Luther, Whitefield, Venn, and others — were all moulded in their first stage by these views.

THE PERIOD OF THE REFORMATION.

The period of THE REFORMATION, to which we now come, gave a testimony to the Holy Spirit more full and explicit than had ever been uttered since the apostolic age.¹ Considered in its origin, the Reformation was itself a great work of the Spirit of God, and the men who bore a

¹ See Luthardt, die Lehre vom Freien Willen, Leipz. 1863; Dieckhoff's Luther's Lehre von der Gnade Theol. Zeitsch, 1860; Frank, die Theologie der F. Concordiae; Köstlin's Luther's Theologie, 1863.

leading part in it were fully conscious of this fact. The Semi-Pelagianism and the Pelagianism in its worst form, which had insinuated itself into the theology of medieval times, were denounced in the most unsparing terms.

308

The Augustinian views were proclaimed with full emphasis and with resuscitated vigour. But these doctrines, from the altered circumstances, received a new application and a new direction in several respects. The term GRACE, for instance, which in Augustin's acceptance intimated the inward exercise of love awakened by the operations of the Holy Spirit (Rom 5.5), and which in the scholastic theology had come to denote a quality of the soul, or the inward endowments, and infused habits of faith, love, and hope, was now taken in the more scriptural and wider sense for the free, the efficacious FAVOUR which is in the divine mind. Luther extended the meaning according to the terms of Scripture; and Melancthon expressed a regret that theologians had not rather used the term *DI FAVOUR*. The Reformers having to use the term grace or : free favour in connection with justification through Christ's righteousness, began largely to use the phrase: "the work of the Holy Spirit," instead of the term "grace."

The Reformers connected faith as the receptive organ or hand by which men receive the imputed righteousness which justifies us in the closest possible way with the operation of the Holy Spirit as its author or producing cause. While they asserted the first point, that justification before God proceeds only from faith, they asserted not less strongly the second point, *that faith in the heart proceeds only from God's Spirit*. And on all occasions they declared that if there be allowed in man any natural power or natural capacity for believing without the operation of the Holy Spirit, this inevitably overthrows at the second stage the very doctrine of grace which had been laid as the foundation of all. To show this, we need only advert to the way in which Luther expressed himself a very few years after the Reformation began. The Reformer had frequently declared that "in divine and spiritual things we have no free-will, but only in name." He said: "That anyone should be represented as just and fearing God *who has not the Spirit*, would be the same as if Belial were called Christ."

309

And when Erasmus was prevailed on to attempt a refutation of Luther, he assailed him on a point which some accounted not a central one — the doctrine of free-will, or the natural power of man. That was not Luther's opinion. "I must own," said Luther, "that you alone in this contest have seized your antagonist by the throat. I thank you for this with all my heart; for I am better pleased to engage on that subject than on all those secondary questions of the Pope, purgatory, and indulgences, with which the enemies of the gospel have teased me till now." Luther's treatise in reply to Erasmus, bearing the title *de servi arbitrio*; undoubtedly one of the most powerful treatises ever written On the subject of which it treats, overthrows the open Pelagianism of Erasmus, who knew little of theology, and the Semi-Pelagianism of men less extreme in their opinions than Erasmus; and it proves to demonstration that the representation of free-will which he impugns, overthrows Christ's work FOR US and the Spirit's work IN us. Almost the only thing that one regrets about this noble production is not its vehemence, which was the natural utterance of the writer — nor the strong statements about man being under the power of Satan — nor the representation of the will as resembling the motionless inaction or immobility of a stock or stone, for these, though lamented by some, will not appear extravagant exaggerations to one enlightened as Luther was — but the title of the book Had the title been *de libero arbitrio et servo*, indicating the natural indefeasible freedom of the human being, and yet the ground of *evil in the will itself*, both sides of the momentous question would have been suitably recognised. For there are times when the Church is compelled — as, for instance, in antagonism to the stoical philosophy, to the Gnostic, Manichæan, Pantheistic, and Determinist theories — to lay emphasis on the freedom of the will, as well as on its bondage. These are the

two sides, neither of which can be unduly pressed without the other as its necessary complement.

310

Hence in Augustin's time the twofold question bringing the two sides of truth to light, and running in direct antagonism to two prevailing errors, was always put as follows: "Without free-will, how shall God judge the world? Without grace, how shall God save the world?" These are the two sides of truth, neither of which can ever be long left in abeyance; and the Church, through the whole tenor of her history, has ever been compelled to exhibit both, sometimes in the same age enforcing the one against Fatalism, and the other against an arrogant Semi-Pelagianism. It was against the latter that the Reformers had more especially to testify.

After the allusion to Luther's treatise "on the bondage of the will," it is not necessary to put together at any length a collection of Luther's sayings on this topic. A few sentences will suffice as a specimen. Thus he says: "We have *need of the Spirit of Christ*, without whom all our works are only worthy of condemnation" (*damnabilia*). And again: "I reject and condemn as erroneous every doctrine which extols our free-will, and fights against the assistance and grace of our Saviour Jesus Christ; because without Christ death and sin rule over us, and the devil is the god and prince of the unconverted world." The noble words of the Reformer toward the close of his treatise *de servo arbitrio* are as follows: "I confess for myself, that even if it were possible *I would not have free-will committed to me*, or anything whatever left in my hand whereby I might endeavour after salvation; not merely because I could not, amid so many adversaries and dangers, and, moreover, opposing devils, withstand and retain it — since one devil is more powerful than all men, and no one would be saved; but because, even though there were no hazards, no adversaries, no devils, I should be constrained perpetually to labour in uncertainty, and to beat the air." Calvin is in full harmony with Luther, and constantly appeals to Augustin's views; and it is not necessary to do more than refer to his *Institutes*.

311

We shall now refer succinctly to the doctrinal views of the Protestant Churches, Lutheran and Reformed. Never since the days of the apostles had anything been defined or preached in reference to the operations of the Holy Spirit more full, accurate, and ample than was set forth in all the Protestant Churches under the blaze of light which shone all around. The Lutheran theologian Hunnius thus expressed himself: "It is most firmly believed in our Churches that in, divine and spiritual things we have no free-will, but only in name," and adds, "Not a particle of what Erasmus contends, for now remains to man, and where any such ability for what is good is to be met with, *it is to be ascribed entirely to the Holy Spirit*" (*de Lib. Arb.*).

Without going into the vast mass of theological writing which was produced at the period of the Reformation on the Spirit's operations, it will be easier, as well as more compendious, to refer to the symbolic books or confessions, and to the catechisms which the various Churches have given forth as public documents, and which were designed to express the Church's faith, and to serve as the rule of teaching for the young. It appears that on the gracious operations of the Spirit, Zwingli, Calvin, Beza, Zanchius, Martyr, Olivian, Ursinus, and others that might be named, were in perfect harmony with the great writers of the Lutheran Church. In a word, the sun of grace shone in the heavens, and the operations of the Spirit of grace in that bright period of the Church's purity and zeal were recognised with one consent on every side. As we must study brevity, let it suffice to say that the harmony of the Protestant Confessions exhibits the Church-consciousness more fully than can be found in the individual authorship of the Churches. Not only so: confessional documents embodying the convictions of collective bodies have a significance that cannot attach to individual writers, however eminent. A few extracts here will suffice.

312

THE AUGSBURG CONFESSION, the Lutheran symbol, says (Article xviii.): “Concerning free-will it is taught that to some extent man has freedom of will to lead a just and honourable life, to choose between things which reason comprehends; but without grace, assistance, and the operation of the Holy Spirit, he is unable to become pleasing to God, or to fear God in heart, or to believe in Him, or to cast out of his heart the innate evil propensity; but *these things are effected through the Holy Spirit*, which is given through the word of God.”

THE CONCORDIÆ FORMULÆ, another Lutheran symbol, says on free-will in the epitome: “It is rightly said, however, on the contrary, that *in conversion, God, through the drawing of the Holy Spirit, makes willing men out of the obstinate and unwilling*; and that *after such conversion the regenerated will* of man does not remain inactive in the daily exercise of repentance, but *co-operates in all the works of the Holy Spirit which He performs through us*.”

“Also that Doctor Luther has written that the will of man in his conversion remains purely passive — that is, that it does nothing at all, is to be understood *respectu divinae gratiae; in accendendis novis motibus* — that is, when THE SPIRIT OF GOD through the heard word, or through the use of the holy sacraments, lays hold on the will of man and effects the new birth and conversion. For, *when the Holy Spirit* has effected and accomplished this, and *through His divine power and operation alone* has changed and renewed the will of man, then the new will of man is an instrument and organ of God, the Holy Spirit, so that it not only accepts the grace, but also co-operates in subsequent works of the Holy Spirit.

“Consequently, that before the conversion of man there are but two efficient causes found, namely, THE HOLY SPIRIT, and THE WORD OF GOD as the instrument of the Holy Spirit, through which He effects conversion, and which man is to hear; he cannot, however, give credence to it and accept it through his own powers, but exclusively through the grace and operation of God the Holy Spirit.”

313

We pass to THE REFORMED CHURCH, and shall begin with THE HELVETIC CONFESSION, the most widely accepted of the Reformed Confessions. This Confession distinguishes very happily, as the CONCORDIÆ FORMULA also does, and as the WESTMINSTER CONFESSION did afterwards, between man FREE and upright before the fall, and man fallen, with *no free-will to do good after the fall*. It is then added: “In regeneration the understanding is enlightened by the Holy Spirit to understand both the mysteries and the will of God, and *the will itself is not only changed by the Spirit*, but also furnished with powers both to will and to do good spontaneously (Rom 8.5, 6).”

In THE SCOTTISH CONFESSION (Article xii) we read: “We are so dead, so blind, so perverse, that neither can we feel when we are pricked, see the light when it shines, nor assent to the will of God when it is revealed, *except the Spirit of the Lord Jesus quicken that which is dead*, remove the darkness from our minds, and bow our stubborn wills to the obedience of the blessed gospel!.”

In THE FRENCH CONFESSION the words are: “We believe that *by the secret grace of the Holy Spirit* we are made partakers of the light of faith, which is the gracious gift of God, and peculiar to those alone to whom God sees meet to impart it.”

In THE CONFESSION OF BASIL we read: “Our nature is so vitiated, and has such a propensity to sin, that *unless it is renewed by the Holy Spirit*, no man can do or will what is good of himself.”

In all the Catechisms of the Protestant Church, in Calvin’s Catechism, in the Heidelberg Catechism, as well as Luther’s, the testimony to the doctrine of the Spirit is definite and ample.

314

We come next to a period of declension. After the ecclesiastical confession to the doctrine of the Spirit in the clear emphatic manner already mentioned, there followed a period of decline and conflict, and this may be traced in all similar epochs in history. Two phases of opinion, having much in common with each other, broke out shortly after the Reformation — the synergistic error in the Lutheran Church, and Arminianism in the Reformed Church. They ran counter to the true doctrine of the Spirit and the homage which is due to the Holy Spirit. They insinuated themselves into both Churches by conceding to the free-will or natural power of man more than the Reformers had acknowledged. They were opinions which led to disastrous consequences in both the Churches, and broke the force of the Reformation.

The synergism which broke out through the influence of Melanchthon in the Lutheran Church had everything in common with the synergistic views of the Greek Church as represented by all her great writers — Basil, the Gregories, Chrysostom, and others. Arminianism, again, in the Reformed Church, was simply a revival of Semi-Pelagianism.

To begin with Synergism. The rise of this controversy, which came to be agitated shortly after Luther's death, was due to the fact that Melanchthon changed his opinion on the subject of free-will and the natural power of man. He had held, with Luther, man's natural inability, and in the first edition of his *Common-places* went farther in the way of denying all liberty than can be vindicated. He began to waver and vacillate after Erasmus published his polemical treatises against Luther, and by an enlarged study of the Greek Fathers, to whom he was already approximating on the subject of free-will. The change discovered itself in germ in the second edition of his *Loci Communes* (A.D. 1535), when he began to speak of three causes in conversion — the word of God, the Holy Spirit, and the human will (*non sane otiosa*). He next spoke of the human will assenting to the word of God.

315

Then, two years after Luther's death, he describes free-will as the faculty in man of applying himself to divine grace (1548) — that is, the ability of applying himself to divine grace in some way. He began to view the human will not so much as the thing to be changed, but as a factor or concurring cause in conversion, though he only once uses the term "co-operation."

When this lamentable controversy began in 1555, the followers of Melanchthon took up the position that man is not merely passive in conversion, but a co-operating cause. Strigel of Jena threw himself with all his energy into the controversy, and openly declared himself in a synergistic sense. Not to mention others, Flacius, the admirer of Luther, and one of the richest as well as most erudite minds that adorned that age, became a vehement assailant of the synergistic opinions. The controversy, as is often the case, seemed sometimes to turn on a razor's edge, and yet truth was on one side and error on the other. Strigel, though he continued to declare that a man could not convert himself without the Holy Spirit, advanced, without doubt, to Semi-Pelagian views when he maintained the human self-determination in the matter of conversion. Flacius, again, starts with the assertion of man's total incapacity for good, and that the divine operation of the Holy Spirit alone gives rise to true conversion. But he committed himself to positions on original sin which were so extreme that they outraged the theological mind both of the Lutheran and Reformed Church. He went so far as to affirm that *sin had become the very substance of man* — an extravagance which repelled every mind, and involved the fearful consequence that on such a theory man could not be a subject of redemption.

The two parties in this controversy largely destroyed each other's arguments, and needed the intervention of a third party to mediate between them and readjust the balance of truth. And this was the very issue that the course of events brought about. Strigel contended that the Spirit's action corresponds to the peculiar nature of the will, but not so as to destroy the will.

316

He held that the Spirit's action on man as a free agent was different from the way in which power is exercised on mere inanimate and unconscious objects, as a stock or stone, and that co-action could not be applied to the will (*voluntas non poteat cogi*). No one will hesitate to say that so far he was right. But the questionable part of his argument begins to appear when he insists on a natural aptitude or power in the will of man for good. He would not allow that the natural man was but passive in the act of conversion. He held that man is not so much dead as sick; and he contended that the power for good is not so much lost as enfeebled, bound, or fettered by sin, so that it can do nothing without the Holy Ghost; but that when freed it co-operates to conversion, though in a languid way. He held that the human will cannot without the Spirit begin its conversion, but that it is not a resisting or merely passive element. The affinity of this view, or rather its perfect identity with Semi-Pelagianism, cannot be doubtful. He seems to have known nothing in his own experience of a sudden conversion by divine grace; and he speaks as if it could not be without the concurrence of a divine and human cause.

Flacius, on his side of the argument, demands whence arises the will to good, the very inclination to conversion, and the prayer for it? Does this come from God alone, or partly from the synergism of man? He adds, "I demand whether you say that the will co-operates before the gift of faith or after the reception of faith?"

The Formula Concordiae, prepared by Brentius, Andrea, and others, came in to put this matter on its right ground, and to correct extremes, when the Lutheran Church was involved in the most critical danger. It repudiated, on the one side, the error that from the human will could come the first beginnings of conversion or anything truly good till grace first apprehends it and replenishes it with new powers;

317

and on the other side the revolting dogma of Flacius, that original sin had become the essence of man. Its admirably balanced statements bring out that *conversion has its efficient cause only in the operation of the Holy Ghost, and that man neither effects it nor co-operates in it*. It is stated that the Holy Spirit acts on the will of man, the subject of the change — that the operation is ON the will and IN the will by means of the word. It repudiates the active synergism of Strigel and the continuous resistance of Flacius, who contended that before and after conversion the human will does nothing but resist. It sets forth that after conversion, but only after conversion, the mind with new powers begins actively to co-operate.

THE UNITARIAN MOVEMENT, begun by Socinius and carried on by the Polish Brethren (*Fratres Poloni*), developed a bold attack on the Holy Spirit, both in regard to His personality and His work. As, however, it was only another phase of Naturalism or Deism, as well as directly anti-Trinitarian; it could not secure a footing within the Church, and was at once expelled.

But the ARMINIAN MOVEMENT, identical in all respects with Semi-Pelagianism, insinuated itself into the Reformed Churches, and became a very formidable power, which spread in all directions, and can scarcely even yet be said to have spent its force. The founder of it was Arminius, born in 1560, a man of distinguished gifts, who, by the aid of benevolent friends, had been helped forward in his studies till he was sent to prosecute his theological curriculum under Beza in 1582. Everything in his history subsequent to this — his visit to Italy, his acquaintance with Bellarmine, the suspicions awakened by his utterances after being promoted to the pastorate in Amsterdam (A.D. 1588), and the doubts entertained as to his opinions when called to be Junius' successor in the chair of Theology at Leyden, though he declared that he held with Augustin, and repudiated the Pelagian tenets — creates a doubt whether the doctrines of grace were ever fully accepted by him.

318

About a year after entering upon his theological duties at Leyden, opinions were propounded by him at variance with the doctrine of the Reformed Church (1604). Then began the controversy which convulsed the Dutch Church.

Without entering into all Arminius' opinions, let me briefly notice those which referred to the Holy Spirit. He maintained that the Spirit's operation was in every case resistible, and that *there was no invincible efficacy put forth on any* to whom the gospel is preached. The assent of the will was said to decide the matter. It was held that every one could obey or resist; that the cause of conversion was not the Holy Spirit so much as the human will concurring or co-operating; and that this was the immediate cause of conversion. Let me briefly notice the points which came up in these discussions.

As to the subjects of conversion, it was a question whether the Holy Spirit exercised the same gracious operation on every hearer to whom the gospel is first proclaimed. This was affirmed by the Arminians. Not only so: they condemned it as an unwarrantable *limitation of the grace of God to hold that the Holy Spirit effectually works faith in any* by removing the resistance of the mind, and by imparting the power to believe. In a word, while nominally allowing the action of the Spirit, it came to this: that it was an inefficacious and resistible influence, little more — if, indeed, it was anything more — than external suasion.

They placed themselves on the same footing with the Semi-Pelagians as to everything bearing on the universality of the Spirit's grace, as to the equality which must be allowed to all men, and as to the sufficiency of grace for all alike. They took the decision of the matter *out of God's free-will*, which they challenged, and *put it into man's free-will*, which they maintained. The question was formally raised: Were all converted that the Spirit intended to convert by the gospel?

319

And at the Hague Conference, the Arminians, without scruple or reserve, laid down the position that the Holy Spirit, when He operates on man with the intention of converting him, can be resisted (*Coll. Hag* p. 227). Sufficient grace was strongly asserted; by which phrase they intimated that assistance was given only in such a way and measure that at his own discretion a man could take the decisive step, and that the will can help itself to the act of faith. But *they denied that the Spirit conferred the gift of faith*. That the Holy Spirit imparts the renewing of the will, or introduces a new quality into the will, rendering it certain that faith shall ensue, they denied. They allowed only assistance, but denied that the will is inclined by the Spirit of God. They insisted that the Holy Spirit never operates on the will of men except in such a way as could be resisted. And they openly denied that *faith* could be called *the gift of God*, as wrought by the Spirit of God

These Arminian tenets run counter to all the invincible energy which makes faith the gift of the Spirit of God. They throw man back on himself, and 'make all dependent on the human will in the application of redemption, forgetting that man has AS LITTLE POWER as MERIT. On the contrary, the Confessions all testified according to Scripture that the will — in other words, that the carnal mind — is enmity against God, and that the Spirit's operations are effectual. These are not so languid as to stop short of taking away the stony heart.

After many years' discussion on these points, in which the true life of the Church consists, the SYNOD OF DORT was assembled [13th Nov. 1618 to 9th May 1619] to give an ecclesiastical decision on them. Representatives were invited from all the Reformed Churches, and these deputies eagerly came to that great Council, except where the Governments, from jealousy, refused permission to attend, which was the case with France. All the topics were discussed with fairness, erudition, and zeal for truth:

320

This great Synod, equal in importance to any of the Ecumenical Councils, is the glory of the Reformed Church. Since the first FOUR GENERAL COUNCILS, none have ever assembled with a more momentous charge or commission. It gave forth in its decrees a full and all-sided outline of the doctrines of special grace; and nobly was its work discharged. The decrees of the Synod were not only made the fundamental articles of the Dutch Church, but continue, as part of the literature of these questions, to have a significance for all time. And it may be questioned whether anything more valuable as an ecclesiastical testimony for the doctrines of sovereign, special, efficacious grace was ever prepared on this important theme since the days of the apostles. Its great point was to show that THE SPIRIT PRODUCES ALL, AND MAN ACTS ALL.

Nowhere has the renewing work of the Holy Spirit been more correctly and fully exhibited than in the Canons of THE SYNOD OF DORT, from which I shall quote only the following articles in the division containing the third and fourth Heads of Doctrine: —

“Article VIII — As many as are called by the gospel are unfeignedly (*serio*) called: for God hath most earnestly and truly declared in His word what will be acceptable to Him — namely, that all who are called should comply with the invitation. He, moreover, seriously promises eternal life and rest to as many as shall come to Him, and believe on Him.

“Article IX — It is not the fault of the gospel, nor of Christ offered therein, nor of God, who calls men by the gospel, and confers upon them various gifts, that those who are called by the ministry of the word refuse to come and be converted. The fault lies in themselves: some of whom when called, regardless of their danger (*securi*), reject the word of life; others, though they receive it (*admittunt*), suffer it not to make a lasting impression on their heart (*immittunt*), therefore their joy, arising only from a temporary faith, soon vanishes, and they fall away; while others choke the seed of the word by perplexing cares and the pleasures of this world, and produce no fruit. This our Saviour teaches in the parable of the sower, Mat 13.

321

“Article X — But that others who are called by the gospel obey the call and are converted, is not to be ascribed to the proper exercise of free-will, whereby one distinguishes himself above others equally furnished with grace sufficient for faith and conversion, as the proud heresy of Pelagius maintains; but it must be wholly to God, who, as He hath chosen His own from eternity in Christ, so He confers upon them faith and repentance, rescues them from the power of darkness, and translates them into the kingdom of His own Son, that they may show forth the praises of Him who hath called them out of darkness into His marvellous light; and may glory, not in themselves, but in the Lord, according to the testimony of the apostles in various places.

“Article XI — But when God accomplishes His good pleasure, or works in them true conversion, He not only causes the gospel to be externally preached to them, and powerfully illuminates their minds by His Holy Spirit that they may rightly understand and discern the things of the Spirit of God; but by the efficacy of the same regenerating Spirit He pervades the inmost recesses of the man; He opens the closed and softens the hardened heart, and circumcises that which was uncircumcised; infuses new qualities into the will which, though heretofore dead, He quickens; from being evil, disobedient, and refractory, He renders it good, obedient, and pliable; actuates and strengthens it, that, like a good tree, it may bring forth the fruits of good actions.

“Article XII — And this is the regeneration so highly celebrated in Scripture and denominated a new creation, a resurrection from the dead, a making alive, which God works in us without our aid. But this is nowise effected merely by the external preaching of the gospel, by moral suasion, or such a mode of operation that after God has performed His part,

322

it still remains in the power of man to be regenerated or not, to be converted or to continue unconverted; but it is evidently A SUPERNATURAL WORK, most powerful and at the same time most delightful, astonishing, mysterious, and ineffable; not inferior in efficacy to creation or the resurrection from the dead, as the Scripture, inspired by the author of this work, declares; so that all in whose hearts God works in this marvellous manner are, certainly, infallibly, and effectually regenerated, and do actually believe. Whereupon the will thus renewed is not only actuated and influenced by God, but in consequence of this influence becomes itself active. Wherefore, also, man is himself rightly said to believe and repent, by virtue of that grace received.

“Article XIII — THE MANNER OF THIS OPERATION cannot be fully comprehended by believers in this life. Notwithstanding which, they rest satisfied with knowing and experiencing that by this grace of God they are enabled to believe with the heart, and to love their Saviour.

“Article XIV — Faith is therefore to be considered as the gift of God, not on account of its being offered by God to man, to be accepted or rejected at his pleasure, but because it is in reality conferred, breathed, and infused into him; not even because God bestows the power or ability to believe, and then expects that man should by the exercise of his own free-will consent to the terms of salvation, and actually believe in Christ; but because He who works in man both to will and to do, and indeed all things in all, PRODUCES BOTH THE WILL TO BELIEVE AND THE ACT OF BELIEVING also (*et velte credere et ipsum credere*).”

Before leaving these erratic theories, let me briefly advert to Amyraldism, sometimes called hypothetic Universalism, which was ill the last degree disastrous to French Protestantism before the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. I refer to it more especially because the phraseology which it introduced is still current in America, and is found in this country in quarters where we are surprised to find it.

323

By those who were competent to take the measure of Amyraldism — such as Rivetus, Maresius, and Spanheim — it was regarded as a subtle form of Arminianism, though its author and his followers declared their harmony with the Articles of the Synod of Dort. After a long discussion of this middle way by one synod after another, in 1637 and 1645, Amyraldus, by his protestations to the effect that he assented and consented to the Articles of Dort, succeeded in disarming further opposition, and in obtaining an acquittal from the charge of heterodoxy in 1649. But it was the death-blow of French Protestantism. The majority of the theologians and pastors soon adopted his opinions. The French Protestant Church virtually ceased to be a witness for the doctrines of grace. A scholar of Amyraldus, Pajon, went farther than his master in minimizing the extent of natural corruption and the power of the Spirit in conversion. For the gracious operations of the Spirit, he, in fact, substituted *the moral influence of the word*, or moral suasion. After this, it was rather the Jansenists than the Protestants in France that gave any testimony to the doctrines of special grace.

A few years later a terrible storm of persecution broke out, and scattered the French Protestants over the globe. It is not for us to call this a divine retribution, or a visitation in wrath. But few will deny that a deep declension had begun — or hesitate to affirm that the salt was beginning to lose its savour. Of those refugees who were scattered in all directions, no fewer than TWO HUNDRED PASTORS repaired to Holland, and were received with deep sympathy, and yet with due caution. They were not to be received as pastors into the Walloon Church, unless they subscribed an article binding them to accept the Articles of Dort, and never to refer in public or in private to those Amyraldist and Pajonian doctrines which Spanheim, Jurieu, Saurin, and others regarded as an Arminian leaven which had destroyed the French Protestant Church.

These pastors consented to subscribe that article, and the Church was thus freed from the evil leaven by which it was menaced.

324

As to the distinction Amyraldus drew between NATURAL AND MORAL ABILITY, still repeated both here and in America, and to which men so distinguished as Edwards, Bellamy, and Fuller gave a too ready ear, let me quote the following pointed and valuable remarks of Leidekker. “The learned Amyraldus,” says Leidekker, “did no service to the cause of the Reformation by his distinction between A PHYSICAL AND MORAL POWER OF BELIEVING IN CHRIST. He supposed the sinner to have the former, but not the latter. He held that Christ died for all men according to a decree of God, by which salvation was secured to sinners on condition of faith; which general decree, according to him, was to be considered as going before the particular decree about giving faith to the elect. When it was mentioned to him that his notion of the general decree now mentioned was absurd, as it suspended the end of Christ’s death on an impossible condition, he denied that the condition was impossible. ‘*For,*’ said he, ‘*though I do not, with the Arminians, deny the impotence of fallen man, or his inability to believe (I allow him to be morally impotent), yet I hold that man has still a physical or natural power of believing, as he possesses the natural faculties of the understanding and the will.*’

“Herein Amyraldus has given a sad example of the abuse of great parts. Shall we suppose that when Christ undertook for sinners in the covenant of grace, He considered them any otherwise than as most miserable, lost, dead in sin, utterly impotent (Rom 5.7, 8.3); or that the wisdom of God gave Christ to die for this end, that sinners might attain salvation by a natural power of believing — a power which Amyraldus confesses could never be exerted?

325

Further, is not faith a most holy and moral act, and, as it takes place in the sinner, purely supernatural act? And shall we allow that a principle which is not moral, but merely physical, can be productive of such a moral and supernatural act? Ought not an act and its principle to correspond with one another? Let the same thing be said of love which Amyraldus has said of faith, and the Pelagians will triumph, who used to speak so much about a natural faculty of loving God above all things. Indeed, upon this scheme there will be no keeping out of the Pelagian opinion about the powers of *pure nature*, and about *physical or natural abilities in man of doing what is morally good*. For, in confuting that opinion, our divines still maintained that the image of God was requisite in the first man, in order to his exerting such morally good acts as those of loving and seeking true blessedness in the enjoyment of Him. But Amyraldus overthrows this doctrine, while he is led, by the distinction he makes between natural and moral power, to hold that the conception of man’s rational nature necessarily includes in it a power of exerting acts morally good, such as those of desiring and endeavouring to obtain the restoration of communion with the infinitely holy and blessed God. The tendency of this scheme became more manifest when Pajonius — a disciple of Amyraldus — began to *deny the necessity of the Spirit’s work* in the internal illumination of sinners, in order to their saving conversion. For, said Pajonius, nothing more is necessary to that end than that the understanding which has in itself a sufficiency of clear ideas (according to the language of the Cartesian philosophy then in vogue) should only be struck by the light of external revelation, as the eye is struck by the rays of light coming from a luminous object.”¹

326

¹ Leydecker, *de Veritate Religionis Reformatae et Evangelicæ*, lib. ii. cap. 6, sect. 82. This translation, though somewhat free, is happy and spirited: it is given in Dr. John Anderson’s *Precious Truth*, Pittsburg 1806.

Church history, in one aspect of it, may be compared to a succession of advancing and receding tides. We may accordingly regard those three erratic tendencies last mentioned as the ebb-tide, after the flow of the Reformation period. Ere long, however, there appeared again clear indications of an advancing tide of spiritual influences, accompanied, as was to be anticipated, with a new testimony to the personality and operations of the Holy Spirit. To these we shall briefly advert.

I shall notice first in order THE PURITAN PERIOD, which, to a large extent, may be described as taking form doctrinally in antagonism to the Arminian teaching and to the Romish practices introduced and encouraged in the English Church by the influence of Archbishop Laud. The testimony to the doctrines or grace, on the part of the Puritans, was accompanied with a signal effusion of the Holy Spirit. For the manner in which they brought out the doctrine of the Spirit's operations as contrasted with the Arminian teaching, which either did not recognise His agency, or confined it to the incipient impulse given at the time of baptism, they deserve the profound gratitude of subsequent ages. Whether we converse on this point with HOWE, whose platonic mind, under the clear doctrine which he held and taught on the subject of the Spirit, soared to the contemplation of the beatific vision; or with OWEN, whose study of the doctrine of the Spirit prompted him to unfold the spiritual mind and the glory of Christ; or with T. GOODWIN, whose researches into the Spirit's operations filled him with an enraptured love of knowledge, and a singular appreciation of the least particle of that word which embodies the Spirit's revelation — we find nothing in their spirituality false or unhealthy. Their doctrine of the Spirit was used to lead men to Christ, not to withdraw men's minds from Him.

These great divines, following in the same path with their predecessors Perkins, Preston, Bolton, and others, made it their task to prove that the Spirit's work is so essential in every system of theology and of ecclesiastical life, that without it all falls under the law of a perilous externalism;

327

that the regeneration of the nature is not less important than the justification of the person; and that the Spirit's work is not to be represented as merely coeval and identical with the rite of baptism. The latter point, taking the Spirit's operations away from the mere observances of Ritualism, was one service among many which Puritan theology rendered to evangelical truth.

In this period the Christian consciousness and the Church consciousness in reference to the Spirit's operations were most definite and clear. It was a period also of great local awakenings, when villages and towns were simultaneously brought under deep religious impressions, and which were always attended with a full belief of the Spirit's personality and work. Marked revivals took place in Scotland under the earnest preaching of Welsh, Bruce, Livingstone, Dickson, Rutherford, and Blair, sometimes simultaneously, at other times more gradually. Similar effects in England accompanied the preaching of Rogers, Blakerby, Baxter, and others of that galaxy of remarkable men who lived and laboured to advance the cause of true religion. And the result was the introduction of a new phase of theology in delineating the order of salvation — *a theology of regeneration cultivated and expanded as a topic by itself*. The ample consideration of this theme by all the Puritans, such as CHARNOCK, OWEN, HOWE, convey a clear proof that a new point of view had been attained. What the previous theologians had developed was by no means repudiated or undervalued, but only supplemented. The great theologians both of the Lutheran and Reformed Church developed the order of salvation as far as the Spirit operates, in order to justification. Now we hear more of regeneration, illumination, and the renewing of the Holy Ghost.

328

The first generation developed in due proportion Christ FOR US and Christ IN US. And this was the school which of all others gave the fullest and most emphatic description of the Spirit's work.

Of the Puritan theology it was the prominent peculiarity to bring out *the distinction between nature and grace*, and to enforce the new birth irrespective of the theory which identifies it with baptism. To one fact all history gives a harmonious testimony. In the ratio in which the ritualistic element ascends, the spiritual element descends; the elevation of the one being the depression of the other. And on the full persuasion of this the Puritans acted through all their history.

But they had difficulties of another kind to encounter from the extreme opinions, nay, wild extravagances, to which sects and parties pushed the very doctrine or the Spirit for which they testified. It seemed as if an enemy had done this to discredit and discountenance the great doctrine to which they gave prominence. There seemed for a time a wild war of errors contending for the mastery. There was not only the naturalism of the Arminian system, but a congeries of other errors. The Quakers abandoned the sacraments altogether, and well-nigh lost sight of the objective Christ in an all-absorbing subjectivity.

To the various classes of these enthusiasts, and to their names, it is not necessary more particularly to refer. Their great error was *to substitute the Spirit for the word*, the mischievous results of which all epochs attest. They set forth that though it was not absolutely useless to peruse the Scriptures, the mere knowledge of the latter was wholly unavailing, and could not promote the soul's salvation; that the man must learn from the Lord Himself, and be immediately instructed by the Spirit. The arrogance and presumption of such a claim was at once apparent. Though these enthusiasts had little if any learning, and a small and very inadequate acquaintance with any of the Christian doctrines by instruction from others or personal study, they claimed to be better informed than the greatest theologians who had spent their life in the humble and prayerful study of Christian truth with all the available aids of learning.

329

It was alleged, however, that these last were but letter-learned men, untaught by the Holy Spirit. They proclaimed that the divine light, kindled in men by an immediate operation of God's Spirit, taught them what was needed for salvation; that more or less of Bible knowledge was of small moment, and that man had, by sin, entirely forfeited anything like a salutary use of reason. They claimed *spiritual illumination apart from the Scriptures*; and they both taught and acted on the principle that they were to act as the Spirit moved them. There were Antinomian enthusiasts professing to be mechanically acted on by the Spirit. Rutherford, who has fully described them in his "Spiritual Antichrist," was a contemporary and a true witness of what he read and saw.

It was to defend truth thus imperiled, and to correct extravagant opinions which repelled many and drove them into antagonism to the whole subject, that Owen prepared his masterly work on the Holy Spirit. It has long been regarded, and justly, as the most important work on the Spirit in any literature. Without undertaking an analysis of this great work, let me simply quote what he says on the direct action of the Spirit on the human mind. He says: "God works immediately by His Spirit in and on the wills of His saints — that is, He puts forth a real physical¹ power that is not contained in these exhortations, though He doth it by and with them." And again, in reference to God's applications to the soul, they are, he says, "both really and physically efficient and moral also; the one consisting in the efficacy of His Spirit, the other lying in the exhortations of the word."

The Puritan movement, like other forms of spiritual life, sprung from a historical necessity, and continued to exert its energies on the foundation of the Reformation theology. And in their eager

¹ It is better to say, "analogous to what is physical" (analoga physice).

desire to glorify their Lord, and to display the full doctrine of the Holy Spirit, these men were scarcely conscious of that original development that they were step by step producing.

330

Were we to review critically the Puritan school of theology, which is not the present object, we should be disposed to say that it scarcely preserved through all its history, especially in the third generation, the equipoise of truth for which it was at first distinguished. It must be admitted, that while it never failed to give a full testimony to the person and operations of the Holy Spirit, it sometimes forgot that the great aim and scope of the Spirit, as the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of the Lord Jesus, is to glorify Christ; that it occasionally gave greater emphasis to the work of the Spirit within than to the work of Christ without; that it frequently gave more prominence to faith as a grace of the Spirit than to faith as the receptive action (*actio receptiva*) or uniting bond to Christ as the Lord our righteousness. The most salutary development is where the one does not eclipse the other.

The Puritanic age may be said to have reached its culminating point, in a theological point of view, in producing those writings to which it gave origin on the doctrine of the Holy Spirit, and which depict the Christian as a new creature in Christ Jesus — a distinct existence, but never separated from the living Head. The writings of Sibbs, Gurnall, Howe, and Goodwin contain a happy delineation of the Spirit's work on the individual as well as on the Church at large, though in proportion they say less than was to have been expected on the personality and mission of the Comforter. The English Nonconformists, the successors of the Puritans, continued for a century and a half to be the great bulwarks and defenders of the doctrine of the Spirit, and it will be an evil day for England and for themselves if, under the spell of an undue partiality for German thought, they should ever cease to regard this doctrine of the Spirit, and the spiritual religion to which right views of the Spirit can alone direct men's minds, as their badge of distinction and their glory.

331

The work of HURRION, though a posthumous publication and never completed, may be described as a work of great value so far as it goes. The same thing may be said of the work of Dr. Guyse on the Godhead of the Spirit. They furnish two of the best specimens which our tongue possesses of the way in which the elements of truth which the ancient Church developed may be recast and blended or interwoven with the more evangelical views of Protestant doctrine. The peculiar cast of Hurriion's work, replete with references to the Greek Fathers, warrants us in saying that those writers are greatly mistaken who are disposed to affirm, as Tholuck did,¹ that on the doctrine of the Spirit the contributions of the early centuries are either barren of results or of little avail to the Church of our time.

The great writers of the English Church subsequently to the Restoration and the Revolution, such as Taylor, Barrow, Tillotson, Sherlock, South, have done less for this department of theology than for any other. The personality and deity of the Spirit have nowhere found more able and strenuous as well as erudite defenders. But on the Spirit's work they were not themselves, except Pearson and Leighton. They were in part repelled by the extravagances into which the Commonwealth sects fell. But another cause is to be found in the Arminian theology, and in the theory of baptismal regeneration to which they were wedded, and through which they, for the most part, considered the subject.

How eminent divines, in the course of another generation, treated the doctrine of the Spirit in the Church of England, appears from the work of the well-known Bishop Warburton, entitled *The Doctrine of Grace, or the Office and Operations of the Holy Spirit*. The able writer, in fact,

¹ Anzeiger, 1848, p. 571.

does not treat of grace at all in any acceptation of the term. He has not in his thoughts the operations of the Holy Spirit, which are commonly called the grace by which men are converted or called to faith and holiness.

332

With him there is no work of the Spirit in that sense, though he says that he will point out the middle way between unbelief and enthusiasm — between such as assert that no divine operation is necessary to improve man's understanding and heart, and such as boast of the personal experience of the supernatural operations of the Spirit. One expects to find that this outline will have its application to individuals in the present day, and is surprised to find that his words refer only to the extraordinary operations of the Spirit in the age of the apostles, and to the fact that these operations ceased with the apostles. No believer in Revelation will dispute his statements so far as he brings out in that connection the fact of the extraordinary operations of the Spirit. The book, however, would have corresponded with its title had he used the term GRACE as descriptive of the Spirit's operations on every true Christian. But no one in any school of theology has been in the habit of using the term GRACE with the special acceptation to which he limits it.

In a word, according to Warburton, the Spirit's office and operations were limited to the extraordinary gifts and supernatural guidance which those enjoyed who were made the chosen vessels of inspiration. He lays down as his fundamental position, that Christ's redemption could not otherwise be communicated to men; that God sent His Spirit to enlighten their understandings and sanctify their hearts; and that the wisdom of God appeared in the method which He condescended to employ at Pentecost in the communication of the Spirit of truth. The whole discussion is occupied with the great work of the Spirit in the inspiration of the apostles. And anything further is set down to a presumptuous and enthusiastic pretension on the part of men who cannot justify their claim, and who are only deceivers or deceived. Hence the unwarrantable violence of his denunciations of Wesley. Any claim to have the Spirit, or to be guided by the Spirit, was repudiated by Warburton as a claim to inspiration.

333

Before we take up the next great controversy on the doctrine of the Spirit, it is proper to notice two currents of evangelical truth and spiritual life, the result of a new outpouring of the Holy Spirit. These were the important movement in Germany under Spener and his followers, and the great awakening which took place in this country and America in connection with Whitefield, Wesley, and Edwards. A brief allusion to these important epochs must suffice, as our object in this sketch is rather to trace the history of the doctrine of the Spirit, than to describe the reformations or revivals which His presence and operations have produced in the Churches.

Spener, in Germany, imbibing the spirit of Arnd, though a Lutheran and faithful to his Church, yet on friendly terms with many of the Reformed ministers, and appreciating true piety wherever he found it, began a movement in many respects analogous to the Puritan movement, though with complexional peculiarities which adapted it to his own land. His aim was the revival of spiritual life in the Lutheran Church, stiffened and ossified by forms; and an extraordinary blessing from on high, or a fresh outpouring of the Spirit for at least two generations, crowned the movement. In Spener's teaching, in his lectures on Arnd's true Christianity, in his sermons on regeneration, and, indeed, in all his writings as well as in the *Collegia pietatis* which he formed, his great aim was, while ardently testifying for all the doctrines of the Reformation, to fan the spiritual life by a constant reference to the Holy Spirit. The previous theology represented by Melancthon, Chemnitz, Gerhard, and others, had spoken of the Spirit's work in the order of salvation. Spener's constant reference to the Holy Spirit's operations introduced into theology a new set of terms. The operations of the Spirit came to be reduced under different

heads, or classified in a new way. And the theologians, who had spoken in a vague, general way on the work of the Spirit in the order of salvation, were under the

334

necessity of explaining themselves in reference to the Holy Spirit as a topic which now required to be treated independently, and in reference to Biblical terms such as calling, conversion, repentance, illumination, regeneration, renewing, holiness, which could no longer be fused together as having no distinct or separate significance, and as all meaning one and the same thing. The union to Christ, effected by the Spirit and the personal inhabitation of the Spirit, had to be treated in a different way.

The movement begun by Spener subsided in the third generation. An opposite current set in, and the spiritual decline was indicated by the question which came to be discussed, whether any supernatural influence was at work in conversion, or whether all was effected by the moral power of the word. Schubert of Helmstadt resuscitated Pajonism, which called forth the keen opposition of Bertling in 1753. A more formidable work appeared from the pen of JUNCKHEIM in 1775, on the supernatural in the operations of grace, which, from the reception it met with, and especially from the commendation bestowed on it by such a man as Ernesti, may be said to have given rise to a set of opinions from which Germany has never recovered. He asserted that the operation of God in men's regeneration and conversion was not to be designated supernatural, or, if that style of language was still retained, only in so far as the Scriptures were of supernatural origin. For the rest, there was nothing that was not wholly natural. The moral power of the word effected all. This was an erratic tendency which, though it called forth less alarm than Pelagianism, or Synergism, or Arminianism, was as perilous as any of them, and proved, perhaps, more calamitous. It was a theory that recognised the Scriptures, but left the Spirit nothing further to do. The propounder of this theory did not perceive that without an inward supernatural work of grace, admitted and believed, men will not long believe in an external supernatural revelation.

335

More than that: if the Spirit does nothing on the individual, His personality will not long be believed in any proper sense of the term. And both results necessarily followed, in due course, in the religious history of Germany.

Junckheim's position was, that if the operations of grace in man's soul were supernatural, conversion, faith, and holiness would be purely MIRACULOUS WORKS, and the operations of God would be irresistible. He accordingly adjusted his views to avoid these consequences, and held that the preacher must inculcate on his hearers that there are *no immediate operations* of the Spirit. He argued, with no small ingenuity and force, that the operations of the Spirit and their effects are not miraculous works, though some divines have called them so; and all that is supernatural in these effects, said he, has one mark or criterion which no enthusiast can turn to account. It consists in this, that they are mediate, and produced by the divine word in a manner conformable to our moral nature; whereas the enthusiast claims immediate revelations based on feeling. He held that the operations of grace do not alter man's nature, and that they take a natural course; that there are no mysteries connected with them, and no influences of a supernatural power which put the human machine in motion. And this he attempts to harmonize with the Lutheran position that the man is passive in conversion.

In a word, the writer, apparently ignorant of the inward experience of these gracious operations of which he ventured to treat, explains away the Spirit's operations or denies them. He concludes that these effects are not to be sought in a mode of operation on the heart, but in the means, that is, in the word of God, of which the effect is far greater than anything effected by

reason or philosophy. But plainly he reduces the word of God, acting merely in a moral way, to a philosophy.

Junckheim had nothing in common with those who affirm that the Holy Spirit immediately operates on the mind as well as the word. And he took up antagonistical ground to the Spirit's immediate operations, because he perceived that this would imply that these operations are irresistible. And he persuaded himself that this could not be proved from Scripture.

336

Having established, to his own satisfaction, that the Spirit's mode of operation is not supernatural, he next inquires, How does man resist grace? This is done, says he, when he suppresses good thoughts and feelings, and neglects to make a right use of them. But he further asks, Is not man, by a right use of them, a co-operating factor in conversion? And he answers no: as little as a patient heals himself by following the physician's prescription. The physician and the medicine healed him. And when he comes to speak of religious feelings, he regards all these feelings as something supernatural, in as far as they have their ground in the word of God, but not in respect of their origin; for they do not, according to him, flow from any immediate operation of the Holy Spirit, but from a comparison of their heart and life with that which the Holy Spirit, in His word, ascribes to the children of God.

With regard to the difference of nature and grace, to the exaggerated statement of which Junckheim and others traced, as they thought, many evil consequences, one is not a little startled with his conclusion. He says that this has always been an apple of discord, and therefore he wishes the term GRACE to be entirely omitted in dogmatic lectures, and not to remain in sermons where the hearers are still less in a position to form definite conceptions. No marvel that he wished the term abandoned, because he had refined away or philosophized away the thing which it expressed. He does not understand by it the supernatural operations of the Holy Spirit, by which fallen men are enlightened, converted, and sanctified. But the title of his own book, "On the Supernatural in the Operations of Grace," is, from his own explanations, a very inept and unmeaning, if not a deceptive, title.

337

After having explained away the true import of Scripture, we are not surprised to find that he attempts to make the symbolic books of the Lutheran Church speak in harmony with his views. Because these symbolic books affirm that the Spirit operates in us only by the word, he argues that this intimates that the operation is not immediate, not irresistible, but moral only, and according to our moral nature. According to Junckheim, prevenient grace amounts to this, that a man cannot prevent the good ideas, thoughts, and sentiments made by the word of God on the hearer or reader, just as it is impossible for us to open our eyes and not see.

The refutation of all this speculation is easy enough on Biblical ground. It is also contrary to the Church-consciousness of the entire Christian world from the beginning. If there was no more power or influence than this put forth, the conclusion must be that man converts himself, and that the Spirit has ceased to act since the age of inspiration. No reason could exist which demanded the immediate presence of the Holy Ghost as a divine Person. Still less could we imagine any meaning or significance attaching to the exercise of prayer for the Holy Spirit. If we accepted the doctrine laid down by Junckheim, and commended by so many in Germany toward the close of last century, that there is nothing to impress or influence the human mind but the moral power exercised by the Scriptures, the inevitable consequence must be to injure faith and to destroy all theology. The mystery of divine power illuminating, renewing, sanctifying the human mind, is merged in a moral influence or logico-moral power which the mere force of motives calls forth from the mind itself. The spiritual union of the word and Spirit — or of the word considered as "the sword of the Spirit" — ceases, and only a moral power remains. The

ruin of theology must also ensue. It is too obvious to need any proof that, on this principle, all the great articles of Christianity connected with the application of redemption — calling, conversion, illumination, renewing, regeneration, and sanctification of the Spirit — must either be rejected or recast.

338

The Church, believing in the Holy Ghost, into whom every Christian is baptized, as well as into the Father and the Son, has always maintained that there is an omnipotent power of the Spirit exercised on every individual believer, as well as a mere logico-moral influence exercised by the word.

This theory of Junckheim was the fatal blow from which, to this hour, German Protestantism has never recovered. It has in it almost every unsalutary element that distinguished Pajonism in the Reformed French Church. And to me it has always seemed that it produced the same calamitous issues in the German Churches which Pajonism produced in the French Protestant Church previous to the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. It combined Pelagianism, Arminianism, Amyraldism, and a sort of Naturalism all in one.

It was well refuted by admirable men, but the current, of which it was but the indication, was too strong and too wide for any refutation to produce much effect. The excellent Lutheran theologian, Storr, refuted the work on Biblical grounds in two valuable Latin discussions on the efficacy of the Holy Spirit.¹ He had a comparatively easy task. His exegesis of the Scripture passages bearing on the subject under discussion was profound and conclusive, and no one can peruse them without feeling that he has scattered to the winds the special pleading of Junckheim in favour of a theory which is so far from being based on Scripture that it can only be regarded as a foregone conclusion. Tittmann did the same in his *Opuscula*.² Wernsdorf, in his *Academic Disputations*, most successfully asserted the true principles of the Lutheran Church on the Spirit's work. And Reinhard, in his *System of Christian Morals*,³ maintained the efficacious operations of the Spirit in the happiest manner and style. But it was too late.

339

The theological revolution was effected: the receding tide since Spener's day continued. Michaelis, Doderlein, and, above all, Ernesti,⁴ the great name in German exegesis, and the masterly writer on hermeneutics, by his laudatory notice, gave Junckheim's work a passport to acceptance in the universities of Germany and among the pastors. German Protestantism had only one step to take further, viz. Rationalism.

The next great fact connected with the doctrine of the Spirit, is THE AWAKENING IN GREAT BRITAIN AND AMERICA in the middle of last century, and the theological development resulting from it. It was undoubtedly the greatest stream of divine life since the days of the Reformation, and imparted mainly to the English-speaking Churches. It was an outpouring of the Spirit so powerful in its character and so fruitful of consequences, that we are warranted to say it has by no means spent its force, and it deserves a passing remark, though we are mainly occupied in tracing the history of the doctrine. The first movement goes back to Boston and the Marrow men, the revivers of true doctrine. Edwards and the Tennents in America, Whitefield and Wesley in England, Robe, M'Culloch, Maclaurin, and Gillies in the Established Church of Scotland, Walker of Truro, Henry Venn, Berridge, Romaine, Newton, and Robinson in the

¹ *Commentatio Theologica de Spiritu Sancti in mentibus nostris efficientia*, Tubingae 1788.

² Tittmann, *de opere Spiritus Sancti salutari opusc.* p. 420.

³ Reinhard, *System der Christlichen Moral*, iv. p. 251.

⁴ *Neueste Theologische Bibliothek*, 1776.

Church of England, with others outside these Churches who zealously preached the same doctrines of grace, may be named as instruments with whom this great movement was identified, and who were raised up to act a part in it. In the second stage we find Rowland Hill, the Haldanes, Simeon, and others at work in different ways. The progress of Christianity, and of this great movement in particular, cannot be viewed as the effect of natural development without any intervention from above. None of the theories which shut out the action of the Church's life-communicating Head can explain this great tide of spiritual influence which put a new aspect on theology and Church life.

340

The theory of natural development, the theory of sacramental grace, not to mention the Romish notion of a vicegerent, all fail to explain such a fresh and powerful current of spiritual life; for they proceed on the principle that Christianity has no present corresponding to its past in apostolic times. They ignore the fact that the Holy Spirit acts with omnipotent and omnipresent energy as the Comforter, Helper, or Advocate whom the Lord promised at His departure, and who frequently descends with an efficacy analogous to the Pentecostal out-pouring from above to quicken and inflame, to reanimate and restore, in a word, to make all things new. The facts connected with the founding of the Church at Pentecost explode the theory of development so current in various forms in all ritualistic and sacramental Churches. These awakenings also attest the presence of the Spirit and the interposition of the Church's Head. They come in seasonably to give a practical refutation of the theology of development, though they are beyond our investigation. They are not in our power: nor will they come forth when we attempt to conjure them; and we can only say, "It is the Lord" (Joh 21.7). While it is Christ's Spirit who ushers in these creative epochs in Church history, and while they indicate His hand who guides His Church onward to her future, they are altogether free and sovereign. We can neither tell the economy of them, nor explain why they pause. We come in only as gleaners on the field of fact, but can neither tell the laws nor estimate the momentum of that mighty and chainless force which breaks forth from the kingdom of God and sweeps over a community. Such a power at that time issued forth which could neither have been divined by human wisdom nor brought about by human power, and spread over America, England, and Scotland. At the time to which we have referred, there was a resuscitation of a Church-consciousness on the subject of the Holy Spirit such as had not been known from the days of the Reformation.

341

It was in a large degree a restoration also of Puritan theology, though Wesleyanism attached itself to a type of theology which was more allied to Lutheranism than to the articles of the Church of England from which it sprung. But of that revival moment which gladdened the English-speaking Churches of last century, we may say that it was above all things Biblical; that it was not a mere revival of ancient forms, measures, and engagements; that it was not, like Jansenism, a mere resuscitation of Augustinianism, valuable as that was, but a return to the Bible, which gave it an elevation, energy, and success which it could not otherwise have had.

The effect of this memorable outpouring of the Holy Spirit was very perceptible on all the Churches. The Calvinistic Methodists, the Wesleyan Methodists, and the Welsh Methodists were the direct and immediate fruit of it. Not less marked was the effect on the doctrine as well as the ecclesiastical and missionary life of the Church of England, though not diffused through the entire mass. The *two Homilies* on the coming down of the Holy Ghost acquired a new significance. The prayers, replete as they are with allusions to the Spirit's work and mission, were offered with new fervour. One author treated the subject of the Spirit after another, free from the misty notions of sacramental grace and the blighting Arminian views which may be traced in all the previous period. The exposition of the subject by Henry Venn in his *Complete*

Duty of Man, by Robinson of Leicester in his *Christian System*,¹ by Romaine in his remarkable discourse on the Holy Spirit, leave nothing to be desired. For amplitude of statement and unembarrassed freeness of doctrinal view, they show how great a change had taken place. Courses of lectures on the Spirit were prepared and delivered. Prayers were offered for the Holy Spirit. Haldane Stuart of Liverpool sent out a yearly invitation to pray for the Spirit.

342

Of this revival the great theologian was President Edwards, whose influence, as a thinker and leader of revival, has ever since been powerfully felt. No man can dispute his claim to a place among the acknowledged magnates of theology, whether we consider his profound exposition of the high doctrines of sovereign grace, or his view of the Religious Affections, in which he states his doctrine of the Spirit, or his almost unparalleled logical power. Had the theological reading of Edwards and his acquaintance with the productions of previous theological schools been in any proportion to his spiritual experience and mental powers, he would have taken his place along with Augustin, Anselm, Calvin, and Owen as one of the greatest formers of thought for all time. But from lack of acquaintance with the theological thought and style of the previous ages of the Church, he does not always lay down his premises or first principles with sufficient breadth and caution. Thus he powerfully describes the supernatural light immediately imparted to the soul by the Spirit of God as giving a sense of divine things in their reality and superlative excellency. But it is too one-sided for a high Calvinist, as Edwards undoubtedly was. His distinction between NATURAL and MORAL ABILITY, in which he has been largely followed by American and English writers, was a capital mistake. Had Edwards fully known the place which that mischievous theory occupied in the Amyraldist system, it would probably never have been propounded in the manner in which it is set forth by him in his essay on the freedom of the will and elsewhere. For all the practical ends for which he appeals to it, it is safe enough; when it is used speculatively, it is dangerous. It was adopted in America by Bellamy, Dwight, Woods, and by the revivalists as a body. It was accepted here by Dr. Erskine, by Fuller, Ryland, Hinton, Dr. Pye Smith in England. Proceeding in that line of things, these writers thought they had gained a vantage-ground. They argued that the previous mode of representing the matter by the followers of Augustin

343

and Calvin, left the idea of a real incapacity or natural inability; that it was chargeable with an improper application of Scripture figures (Eph 2.1; Eze 37.); that they gave a needless point of attack to Pelagians; and that men might reasonably say that they were not responsible for not performing what was really not in his power. To obviate this, the assertors of the above-named distinction said, The proper language to be used was simply that men would not, not that they could not, repent and believe the gospel They wished to exhibit that the entire turning-point was with the will, and they threw the responsibility on the man to make him feel that he would not come and be saved.

These expositions of inability, resolving the whole matter into an act of will, served no good purpose or end. They were not in harmony with Scripture nor with the doctrines of the Reformation, either in the Lutheran or Reformed Church. They were an attempt in words at least to do something, or at least seem to do something, to obviate the common objection of the Semi-Pelagians: "A man cannot be under an obligation beyond his ability; he cannot be bound to do what is not within his own power and resources," The answer to that objection, as given by Marckius and by all the divines of the post-Reformation period, was, that while God did not require of man in innocence anything for which he had not ability, yet God did not lose His right to demand obedience though man has forfeited his power or ability. This answer was held to be

¹ See Robinson's *Christian System*, vol. ii.

sufficient; and it is recognised by all who have right views either of the IMPETRATION or APPLICATION OF REDEMPTION. The writers to whom Edwards incautiously gave this new impulse supposed that a better answer could be given by drawing a distinction between natural and moral ability. They set forth that men, even as they now are, have a natural power to believe in Christ and to repent, but that they are denuded of all moral power to do either. There is nothing more deceptive than the use of such nomenclature, which

344

really amounts to nothing. It hides the true state of the question under cloudy terms. To show how unmeaning that distinction is, let me notice the following points : — 1) The inability, according to the express words of Scripture, must be traced to the understanding as well as to the will (1Cor 2.14). To the natural man the things of the Spirit of God are foolishness, because he cannot know them, and because he misrepresents them. But to prove, that no efforts of the natural man will avail to make a change, and that only the supernatural light imparted by the Spirit can suffice, the apostle says, “because they are spiritually discerned.” (2) The inability, viewed, according to the Pauline statements, as enmity against God, as a non-subjection to the divine law, and as an incapacity for being so subject (Rom 8.7), may be called both *natural* and *moral*. That is, it is the loss of the image of God, or of the original righteousness which at first belonged to Him and was natural to Him. As man’s entire nature is subject to this corruption to such a degree that he cannot think a good thought or perform a single good act without a change of nature, this inability may be called natural and culpable. The act of the will is not the only hindrance. There is the corruption of the nature and the want of supernatural grace. If it lay all in a want of will or inclination, the frequently repeated *cannot* of Scripture — *e.g.* cannot come, cannot please God, cannot bear fruit, and the like — would have no other significance than the disinclination of a man to do what he has within him full ability or power to do, if we were only induced to will it. There can be no greater misrepresentation or deception. (3) A common paralogism is: “If a man cannot in a true manner repent and believe, then he cannot do the opposite, disbelieve and refuse salvation.” But all unbelief and impenitence have their root in natural depravity, and grow from it. The inability to repent and believe presupposes a bias or tendency to the opposite sin, and makes it natural and easy to practise it;

345

and they are left the more to shut their eyes and ears under a peculiar induration permitted to descend on them.

All this serves to show how mistaken Edwards was in making that distinction, which is still drawn by many of his followers, between natural and moral ability. What was really aimed at was the conjunction of two things, neither of which must be permitted to eclipse the other, viz. free agency and inability, personal responsibility and the necessary helps or aids of God’s Spirit. And the true object is gained, not by magnifying natural ability and shutting men up to *will*, but by exhibiting the two sides of the incomprehensible mystery. They are both true; and all that theology effects, is to conserve the mystery.

Again, we have to trace, as in previous epochs, THE RECEDING TIDE OF THE SPIRIT. Before the great leaders of that revival had passed away, erratic views on the operations of the Spirit had begun to display themselves, the usual concomitants of declension. The first of these was Sandemanianism, which we notice because its distinctive tenet — the intellectual assent of faith — was accepted by a large section of ministers in Scotland, and even by such a man as Dr. Erskine, and still holds its place. About twenty-five years after the formation of the Glasites in 1729, a dividing question was started by Sandeman on the subject of saving faith, which, according to him, was nothing but the faith of common life — ASSENT TO TESTIMONY. The letters on Theron and Aspasio, which he published in 1757, embodied a new system of doctrine.

He allowed no work of the Spirit in the effectual application of redemption. He says excellent things on the impetration or purchase of redemption; but he repudiates all inward grace as counterfeit. Under the guise of magnifying the former, he vilifies the latter, and all who preached it, with the greatest contempt and scorn. He calls any allusion to it self-righteousness and pride. One can easily see, what he himself allows, that his mind had once been

346

troubled with convictions and contrition, and that he had solved the matter in the wrong way. According to Sandeman, faith was a mere passiveness in coming under impressions, a passive belief of the truth without doing anything but apprehending the knowledge of what he often calls the bare truth, or Christ's bare work, without any act, exercise, or exertion of the mind whatsoever. And to leave no possible misconception as to what he meant, he says, "The Spirit of God acts AS the soul, sense, or meaning of the words wherein the gospel is delivered" (p. 360). After stating that much has been said and written in defence of supernatural grace, or the agency of the divine Spirit influencing the hearts of men, in opposition to those reasoners who doubt of or deny any such influence, and that many things have been said on this head, serving to give us false notions of the divine grace and Spirit, Sandeman subjoins, "The Holy Spirit is called the Spirit of truth, as also the Spirit of grace. He speaks and breathes only the grace and truth that came by Jesus Christ. When a man then comes to know the gospel, or to receive the Spirit, he thinks of no other grace but what appeared in Christ's tasting death for them; no other truth but what was manifest in Christ, the end of the law for righteousness. This differs not a little from what the popular doctrine leads us to think of, namely, *the truth of grace in the heart*. When our systems describe faith to us as a saving grace bestowed on us, by which we make use of Christ for salvation, are we not led to think of some grace necessary to our salvation beside what appeared when Christ by the grace of God tasted death for the sins of men?"

It is clear that the writer identified the influence of the truth and the influence of the Spirit, and that he intended to supersede every other grace than the objective grace displayed in the atonement. Still more unambiguously he says, "All the divine power which operates upon the minds of men, either to give the first relief to their consciences or to influence them in every part of their obedience to the gospel, is *persuasive power*, or the forcible conviction of truth."

347

If all is persuasive power, and if the Holy Spirit acts as the soul, sense, or meaning of the words, that is antagonistic to all that the apostle affirms when he says that the natural man cannot know the things of the Spirit of God, "because they are spiritually discerned," The Spirit gives all that discernment and conveys all that meaning. Fuller, the eminent Baptist minister, and Rev D. Wilson, London, wrote admirably against Sandemanianism. Fuller's letters on this subject would have been more conclusive had he followed Sandeman step by step instead of turning aside to less able men.

It remains to sketch the doctrine of the Holy Spirit during this nineteenth century. The revival of the British and American Churches may be regarded as the most obvious and signal work of the Spirit during last century, though many a similar outpouring of the Spirit has taken place since. THE GREAT outstanding WORK OF THE HOLY SPIRIT in the present century is THE SUCCESS IN MISSIONS. But as our object is to trace the phases of doctrinal opinion more than Church life, I shall not turn aside from this.

In all the theological thinking on the operations of the Spirit in this country and America, the powerful influence of President Edwards may easily be detected. Its most important element appears in the various writers who, like Dwight, Ryland, and others, imbibed the views contained in the treatise on the Religious Affections. The more speculative point on the so-called natural ability, often carried to an unwarrantable and dangerous extreme, was found in all the

American revivalists till Dr. Hodge and the Princeton divines withstood it, and did much to counteract¹ its spread.

Here I may add that it was a wholly gratuitous collision into which Edwards' opinions were brought with the opinions of Marshall, Hervey, Boston, and the Marrow men, by a spirit

348

of controversy on the part of Bellamy. He represented some of the expressions of these eminent men in a wrong light, as if they did not hold the necessity of regeneration as antecedent to the first act of faith. It was a misrepresentation of these great men's opinions, who maintained in terms the most unambiguous, that *regeneration is not effected by the word without the Spirit, nor conversely by the Spirit without the word*, and that the Spirit of light and revelation in the knowledge of Christ is the source of all spiritual affections. But the aim of Marshall, and of the others named along with him, was to set forth the supernatural work of *regeneration as the first act of faith*; in other words, to prove that a regenerate person is never for a moment in possession of regeneration without the exercise of saving faith on its object; that regeneration proceeds in order, but that the regenerate person is never destitute of saving faith on Christ. He held that the Spirit of God does *not work faith till we act it*. He maintained, as strongly as Edwards did, that *the Spirit produces all and that we act all*, but that there is no inoperative possession of faith as a grace of the Spirit without its active exercise on Christ as its proper object. And the design of so putting the matter was a practical one. He would have men begin the exercise of faith in compliance with the word of invitation, without waiting for the knowledge that the Spirit had already effected in them the saving change.

A few further remarks will suffice for what remains to be said on the doctrine of the Spirit in connection with modern American theology. If we except the peculiar views of Finney and the revivalist school, whose tendency was to magnify human ability, and to keep the Holy Spirit and His operations out of view in all their preaching, there was little in the mode of presentation adopted either in the old or new school to which, when rightly explained, any Biblical divine could take just exception. There might be different modes of explaining the nature of regeneration. Some had their taste-theory. Dwight, for instance, following in the line

349

of Edwards, made the change of heart consist in a relish for spiritual objects imparted by the Holy Spirit. Others explained the fact by a change of the ruling purpose or chief end. But these were only modes of exposition where the same truth was held.

The main point of discussion between those who at bottom built on the same foundation was, whether the Holy Spirit acts on the mind *MEDIATELY* or *IMMEDIATELY*. But by both the agency of the Spirit was spoken of as preceding the action of the human mind in conversion, and as the cause of the change. The human mind was considered as only concurring with the divine Spirit in turning the man from the error of his ways. The old school laid emphasis on the fact that man is passive in regeneration and active in conversion. It was held that in what is properly the act of God the man cannot be said to be active, because he is but the party changed, or the object on whom the change is produced. As to the new school, it was sometimes alleged against it that the agency of the Holy Spirit was represented wholly as that of moral suasion. But they vehemently repelled this as an injustice.

This whole question, whether the Spirit of God acts only by the intervention of the word, is often rendered ambiguous by the mode in which it is stated. The question of the *immediate* or *mediate* operation by the Spirit is not whether God's word is used or not. Both intend to assert

¹ See the Princeton essays *On Human Inability*.

that the change is effected by the word, as the instrument in the hand of God or as the sword of the Spirit. The true mode of stating the question is whether the word produces the result by mere moral suasion, or by the Spirit's direct action in regenerating the mind.

The full, well-balanced doctrine of the Spirit has long been maintained in England by the successors of the Puritans. They have handled it with an amplitude of view, a freshness of delineation, and a spiritual tone which leave nothing to desire. This is the eminent service rendered to Christianity by the English Nonconformists. Not to go back to the Baptists

350

of former times, those eminent men who adorned their ranks at the beginning of this century, most of whom imbibed the views of Edwards in the best sense, set forth in a happy combination the operations of the Spirit with a full and free proclamation of the gospel. The circular letter of the eloquent Robert Hall gives an admirable exposition of the work of the Spirit and of the Church's duty; and the same thing is true of Fuller's circular letter; both prepared in order to diffuse right views on this momentous theme. The admirable work by Harrington Evans, entitled *The Spirit of Holiness*, is the work of one who outlived the blighting influence of Sabellianism, under which he fell for some time; and who, subsequently to his restoration, continued for many years to give a more emphatic testimony to the personality and work of the Spirit than any other man perhaps has done since the time of Owen.¹

The English Congregationalists during this century have produced several works of much value on the doctrine of the Spirit. The exposition of this topic by Williams in his *Equity and Sovereignty*, by Payne in his Lectures, by Wardlaw in several publications, and by Stowell in his admirable lectures on *The Work of the Spirit*, forms a literature with which, for its deeply spiritual and experimental doctrine, every Biblical

351

divine must fully sympathize. This is their badge of distinction. The one exception to these important contributions is the work of Dr. Jenkyn on *The Influences of the Holy Spirit*. But as Dr. Payne has fully exposed and refuted that attempt to identify the Spirit and the word, and as it does not differ from the views of Pajon and Junckheim, already explained, it is not necessary to occupy space in further refutation of that line of thought.

The work of Stowell, bating some minor points to which we have already taken exception in this volume, is a broad and comprehensive description of some parts of the ministration of the Spirit. It is limited to the spiritual life. And its object, according to a plan formed during a pastoral ministry of thirty years, was to "show that neither Church traditions, philosophical theories, nor mystical imaginations, are in accordance with what the Spirit of God has taught concerning His own work, but that Christian spiritualism is the harmony of divine revelation with the consciousness of man." Mr. Stowell begins with man rather than with the divine economy in the mission of the Holy Ghost, or with His personality and Deity. Nor could any

¹ Mr. Evans, having read some of those writings of Dr. Isaac Watts which have an all too obvious Sabellian tendency, came to deny the distinction of persons in the Trinity. He published his Sabellianism in a work entitled *Dialogues on Important Subjects*, in 1819. His history, in connection with this change of doctrinal opinion, is full of significance and warning. He had been an acceptable minister in the Church of England, and much blessed in his work. The spell of his new opinions so blinded his mind, that he did not for a time perceive all that was involved in it. As he did not deny the work of the Spirit upon the heart, he did not for a time suspect that the Holy Spirit was dishonoured. When he came to see that he denied the Deity of the Son and the real glory of the Holy Ghost in the economy of redemption, he wrote a refutation of his own work in *Letters to a Friend*, by J. H. Evans, 1826. He collected all the copies of his dialogues, and consigned them with every mark of contrition to the flames. The whole account given in the Memoir by his son is replete with interest. But the memorable fact is (p. 50) that his own soul suffered, and that there was a most manifest withering in his ministry. After his return to sound Trinitarian views, scarcely ever was there in London a more blessed ministry than his.

objection against this method be sustained, if, in the subsequent parts of the volume, sufficient prominence had been given to the agent and His mission as well as to His work, which, however, we desiderate. After describing the wrong choice which is uniformly made, and which, as he happily shows, must be ascribed not so much to any other cause, as to an inward and spontaneous predisposition, he arrives at the conclusion that with man nothing becomes an actual motive, however clearly its truth may be perceived, however seriously its reason and right and authority may be responded to, until his spirit is changed; adding that either it must remain undone, or God must do it (p. 49).

The valuable work of Dr. James Buchanan of a practical and devotional character, Hare's *Mission of the Comforter*, Winslow's work on *The Spirit*, deserved the important place

352

which they have occupied in. public estimation. An anonymous work, entitled *The Comforter*, deserves also favourable notice.

We have already referred to Dr. Wardlaw's services in connection with the work of the Spirit. As Dr. Payne and Mr. Stowell refer to the correspondence carried on by Dr. Wardlaw on the one side, and by the Congregationalist Churches, from whom he separated, on the other, it may serve, perhaps, better than any other historical facts that could be adduced, to refer to that discussion, because the important spiritual truth which he asserted in that controversy exhibited the true opinions of the Congregationalist body. In order to remain in Church fellowship with some of the neighbouring Churches, he demanded evidence that they believed in a SPECIAL INFLUENCE OF THE SPIRIT, and not in a mere general influence given equally to those who believe the gospel and to those who reject it. He cut off all evasion from those who were ready to admit the influence of the Spirit in words and to deny it in fact. In taking this step, which we can only commend as a faithful act of discipline, Dr. Wardlaw declared that an agreement on the work of the Spirit in conversion was, by the body of which he was a minister, always held as equally essential with an agreement of sentiment regarding the work of Christ. And he adds that the doctrine of the special influence of the Spirit has been regarded as characteristic of that body in Scotland ever since its commencement (p. 83). The professed convert attributed his change of heart and the faith. thence resulting to nothing in himself, but to the grace of the Spirit making him to differ from other men (p. 99).

The great question discussed in that correspondence was whether they who are converted to God experience any *direct inward influence or operation of the Holy Spirit on their minds distinct from, but accompanying the word*. This is emphatically affirmed by Wardlaw, and evaded but really denied by the other party, who regarded the influence of the truth and

353

the influence of the Spirit as one and the same. What Dr. Wardlaw meant by the special influence of the Spirit was His operation *within* the mind and heart. accompanying the truth and rendering it efficacious; whereas they held no influence hut that of the word, or external means (p. 124).

As the parties attached to this modern Pajonism questioned or denied any direct internal working of the Spirit in conversion, and said that the Spirit works only by His truth, His people, and Providence, the whole of their positions were fully exposed and sometimes refuted by a happy *reductio ad absurdum*, or by propounding a series of untenable suppositions which, according to their premises, must needs be held. Thus Dr. Wardlaw argues — 1) The subject of conversion must be less opposed to God than others, if the opposite view has any validity. He must have a better disposition, and have whereof to glory contrary to Scripture (1Cor 4.7); or (2) the word, or means, or instruments, must have more power at conversion than on any former occasion; and who does not see the absurdity of a fact or motive having more force one day than

another, when, according to the supposition, it is all external? But when we affirm the Biblical position, that the indisposition of the heart is removed by the new heart being given (Eze 36.26), no further difficulty remains. Dr. Wardlaw in the most cogent style of argument proves, in opposition to his opponents, that the gospel to which the heart is opposed can never change the heart *till that gospel is admitted*, and that it can never be received without the interference of a higher power (p. 140).

The following words will suffice to show the manner in which he conjoins the two things — the word and Spirit: — “To show the necessity of a direct divine agency of the Spirit in the soul of man, *accompanying the word as the instrumental means*, in order to account for its conversion would require a volume.” “If the influence of the Spirit is merely the influence of the word, of evidence, and of circumstances

354

operating on the human mind independently of any efficacious, inward, illuminating, spiritualizing energy, then there is nothing supernatural in the case — nothing beyond or different from the ordinary phenomena of the mind as affected by information with its attendant proofs, or whatever else may contribute to excite attention and command assent. You do no more than put the Spirit in the place of Providence, or of the human agent through whose instrumentality Providence works. The means are left to their own operation, there being no other influence accompanying or superadded” (p. 60). After adverting to the inadequate conceptions entertained as to the heart’s alienation from God, and the historical fact that the denial of inward special efficacious grace to the conversion of sinners and the denial of the atonement have uniformly gone together, the correspondence goes over all the points in debate. It is one of the most valuable discussions polemically which has recently appeared on the Spirit’s work, and brings up and exposes the present phase of Pajonism and Semi-Pelagianism. Dr. Wardlaw exposes the avowal that when a sinner believes he receives the Spirit! How comes the sinner to believe? he exclaims; whence this spiritual perception?

Before passing from the Congregationalist writers, to whom we owe some of the best parts of our theological literature on the doctrine of the Spirit, it may not be out of place to refer to a tendency among them to explode the distinction usually made between the common and special operations of the Spirit. They seem drawn to this by considerations which, whether accepted or not, are entitled to respect. They wish apparently to prove, against Arminian opponents, that it is only in His testimony that the Spirit can be said to be resisted; that in His work, properly so called, the Spirit is irresistible, and that He who hath *begun a good work* will perform it till the day of Jesus Christ. Of course, if that distinction can be fully established, the advantages connected with that mode of putting divine truth are obvious. However, I am merely stating

355

here historically that this tendency is cropping out among their most eminent writers. Wardlaw plainly inclines to it in the above-named, correspondence and in his system. Dr. Pye Smith thus asserts it in his *First Lines of Christian Theology* (Schol iii): “On what is called by many *common grace* and its essential difference from that which is *saving*; this is not Scriptural phraseology, it is needless, and tending to embarrassment” (p. 568). Dr. Payne in like manner says, “I do not believe that the influence of the Spirit of God, in the specific and proper sense of the term, i.e. an influence *distinct* from the moral or persuasive influence of divine truth, is ever exerted except upon those who were prepared unto glory.”

Only two additional phenomena in this country demand a passing notice, because they claim, in a peculiar sense, to owe their origin to the Holy Spirit — IRVINGISM and PLYMOUTH BRETHRENISM. They are so vastly inferior to their pretensions, however, that they rather awaken a feeling of regret and pity.

As to IRVINGISM, with its ostentatious parade of supernatural gifts and of extraordinary offices, which have had no real existence since the apostolic age, it is after all smothered under ritualistic forms. Were there nothing more to prove its hollowness, this would suffice. Such a supply of the Spirit as this sect claims could not co-exist with its pomp of prepared liturgical and office-forms. It was largely a revival of Montanism; and the way in which it committed itself to a revival of twelve apostles for the sealing of the apocalyptic twelve thousand immediately before the second advent (Rev 7.4), will prove its death-blow, which cannot long be delayed or warded off in the nature of things.

As to BRETHRENISM, it will have a longer existence probably than the other phenomenon. It has produced a literature on the Holy Spirit of a very mixed character. Mr. Darby, Mr. Kelly, and Mr. Harris have all written on the Holy Spirit. While many excellent things have been said by all these

356

writers on the distinction which must always be carefully drawn between Christ's work FOR US and the Spirit's work IN US, on the inhabitation of the Spirit in the hearts of Christians, and on the communion between Christ and His people by the Holy Ghost the Paraclete, there are three points where their doctrinal views on the Spirit are mischievous in the last degree. (1) They have very much resuscitated the Cocceian notions as to the alleged low platform of the Old Testament saints. They represent them all as burdened and fettered by the Spirit of bondage, till one hardly sees where spirituality remains. They thus come to divide the Church which was one from the days of Abel into two. (2) They make a presumptuous claim to be in their assemblies under the presidency of the Holy Ghost, as they phrase it; and, accordingly, they venture to carry out the decrees and resolutions come to under this imagination with a confidence little less than apostolic. (3) They take exception to what most other Churches, not swamped by Ritualism, have always regarded as one of the most important and blessed duties — *to pray for the Holy Ghost*. The Church of God of all ages, according to the most explicit Scripture examples — the Greek Church, the Roman Church, all the Protestant Churches, in the exercise of a deep Christian instinct — have invoked the Holy Ghost, and expected larger and larger supplies and communications; and they grieve for and confess their sin in not having more implored His help and presence. This sect, by an obvious misinterpretation of Scripture, objects to the practice of praying for the Spirit, because forsooth He was given at Pentecost.

In winding up this historical survey, we have only to add an outline of the modern views on the doctrine of the Spirit which prevail in GERMANY, HOLLAND, and SWITZERLAND. Germany seems to have abandoned this whole field, as if it were no longer worthy of cultivation. There is not a single work in the whole compass of German literature on the office

357

and work of the Holy Spirit, if we except the unfinished work of Kahnis,¹ of any value or importance. And when we inquire into the reason, it is traceable partly to the dominant Sabellianism, partly to the utterly misplaced importance attached to the sacraments, and which has produced results scarcely less calamitous, notwithstanding the evangelical preaching which prevails in Germany, than the same error has caused in the Church of Rome. The Lutheran

¹ Kahnis, *Die Lehre vom Heiligen Geiste*, Halle 1847. Having procured the first part of this work thirty-five years ago, I eagerly waited for its continuation. The writer had before this published a Latin tractate denying the personality of the Spirit. Here he asserts the opposite view, and in an able, erudite way adduces the Patristic testimony down to Origen. Whether the author wearied of his subject, or Germany showed no interest in it, or whatever was the cause, the learned author never proceeded further with his undertaking. The only other recent works on the doctrine of the Spirit in the whole compass of German literature are the two following small treatises, of no great importance: (1) Wormer, *Das Verhältniss des Geistes zum Sohne Gottes*, Stuttgart 1862; and (2) *Die Bedeutung des Heiligen Geistes bezüglich der auferstehung des Leibes* (anonymous), Basle 1866.

Church system is such that it does not require the Spirit's work for the application of redemption. What other Churches ascribe to the Holy Spirit, the Lutheran Church ascribes to the sacraments and Church ordinances; and these opinions are so diffused through the community, and so dominate the minds of clergy and laity alike, that there remains in reality in the ecclesiastical or theological mind no place for the operations of the Spirit on the individual. Regeneration is identified with baptism. Prayer for the Spirit is deemed superfluous, because the sacraments are always equally replenished with blessings. A new supply or outpouring of the Spirit is, according to them, an English or American extravagance.

There is A THREEFOLD STANDPOINT OF THEOLOGICAL CONCEPTION which, during the present generation, has moved the German mind. One extremely negative tendency proceeded on the supposition that Christianity had outlived itself, and that what had been regarded as the life-principle of the Church in all ages, faith in the historical Person of Jesus,

358

incarnate, crucified, and risen, the Redeemer of sinful humanity and the source of life, must give way before another, a new and spiritualized, form which disengages the idea from the shell of the historical manifestation. Against this tendency all Christians in all lands maintained the same positive historical belief. But two other tendencies, while at one in opposing the above-named school of Baur and Strauss, diverged from each other in carrying out their special conception of Christianity. A *second* tendency, therefore, held firmly by the ecclesiastically given form in which Christianity had won its triumphs as a missionary power among the nations, and as a principle of reformation from the corruptions of Popery; and they were disposed to regard this as necessary for the future as it had been powerful in the past. A third tendency attempted to continue at one with Rationalism in the principles of philologico-historical interpretation, and only desired a more spirited application of them. They would not break the thread of development where Rationalism began.

This last tendency, known as the mediating school, which took its rise with Schleiermacher (A.D. 1820-34), did not recognise THE PERSONALITY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, and consequently had nothing to say as to HIS WORK. Schleiermacher's views were in most things antagonistic to the Church doctrines. It may be said of Schleiermacher's system, though we cannot in this place completely analyse it, that it struck to the core the mind of his country, casting many in its mould, and in others setting in motion an unwonted energy of action and reaction such as nothing but the mighty impulse of a mighty spirit could create. In his system all the great doctrines connected with God as an authoritative lawgiver fall into the background. But great and glowing prominence is given to all the views which stand connected with the Person of Jesus as a fountain of spiritual influence.

359

The centre round which His whole theology moved was, to use his own expression, the communion of life with the Redeemer (*Lebens Gemeinschaft mit dem Erlöser*).

But in reference to the distinction which obtains between the Persons of the Godhead, his views were Sabellian: Christ as the Logos, said he, apart from his manifestation in a particular Person (!), belongs to ecclesiastical conceptions; and instead of a personal Holy Ghost he speaks merely of "the common Spirit of the Christian Church proceeding from God." The Schleiermacher school, which has risen to great influence and is still rising, bore the distinct impress of Sabellianism or Modalism from its commencement. An ingenious essay¹ appeared from the pen of Schleiermacher expressly comparing the Athanasian and Sabellian doctrine, and assigning the marked superiority to the Sabellian theory. But, ingenious as the exposition undoubtedly

¹ This essay originally appeared in the Theologische Zeitschrift von Schleiermacher. De Wette, und Lücke. Drittes Heft.

was, it was highly unjust to Biblical Trinitarianism. The entire school, so far as it abides by Schleiermacher's principles, cannot be regarded as asserting anything approaching to sound ecclesiastical Trinitarianism. In as far as it has accepted Schleiermacher's opinions on this point, and it has done so with a greater or less general consent, we find nothing but the indwelling scheme or the Sabellian view of Jesus. In every form of Sabellianism — of the modern not less than the ancient type — there has always been and must be a certain affinity to Pantheism. In Schleiermacher's essay, already referred to, it was strongly asserted that Christian faith did not expressly teach the Deity of Christ. It was alleged that Deity was attributed to Him only in hymns, poetical effusions, and rhetorical addresses; that the Church-doctrine of the Trinity arose in Alexandria through a Platonizing tendency and in a philosophical interest; and that, but for this, the Sabellian doctrine, which accepts no personal distinction in the Godhead, would doubtless have become the predominant opinion. Not only

360

so, he goes on to affirm still further that *Sabellianism satisfies the demands of Christian piety as well as the Church-doctrine*; and that it has this peculiar consideration to recommend it, that while the Church-doctrine is transcendent, the Sabellian view, on the contrary, refers to the order of salvation and to God's relation to the world. According to this Modalism, which has no tri-personal God, the name SON OF GOD means no more than God redeeming; and the name SPIRIT OF GOD means no more than the union of God with the Christian Church without distinct personality.

On the contrary, all sound Trinitarian divines have maintained that the very transcendence of the Church-doctrine which Schleiermacher depreciates is its true glory. They assert that all the Persons of the Trinity are what they are *prior to creation, prior to redemption, prior to the formation of the Christian Church*. These deeds only manifested what the Persons were essentially from all eternity. They only revealed themselves by deeds of power and of grace. They were divine Persons with a distinct subsistence prior to and irrespective of any deeds performed in creation, in redemption, or in regeneration. But we limit ourselves here to the work of the Holy Ghost. It is evident from Scripture that men were regenerated by the Spirit, and raised up by Him to do a work for God, previous to the formation of the Christian Church; and that multitudes in all the ages subsequent to the fall, and prior to the day of Pentecost, were enlightened by Him with a true spiritual knowledge, and possessed with a true spirituality of mind. All this, as we read in the Old Testament records, was going on before the Pentecostal effusion of the Spirit. The Holy Spirit dwelt in prophets and righteous men in the Old Testament as well as in the supernaturally gifted office-bearers of the New Testament Church; and the Spirit could not have so dwelt in them unless He really subsisted as a divine Person, with a distinct personality in the Godhead. Nor was that all: the Holy

361

Spirit was the cause of all the vast variety of miracles in both economies, and the author of all Old Testament prophecy as well as of all New Testament Scripture; both of which are spoken of as the work of the same Spirit, with no difference as to their origin or authority (2Pet 1.21).

If all this is so, in vain do these Sabellian writers allege that the Spirit is but the union of God with the Christian Church. According to Schleiermacher's outline of the Sabellian theory, moreover, it is maintained that *the Holy Spirit is but the Spirit of the whole, the common Spirit of the Christian Church*. It is difficult to apprehend precisely what that means. But the explanation which he himself gives of the statement is in the last degree startling: "The Spirit," says he, "is only in the whole: for as the Spirit is just the Godhead, *every Christian must be a Christ*, IF THE SPIRIT AS SUCH WERE IN EVERY INDIVIDUAL." The more that the reader attempts to apprehend the import of that statement, the more surprise and pain take possession

of every reverent mind. But plainly, according to the meaning of the terms, the only difference between Christ and the Christian is to be traced to a more and a less of the inhabiting Godhead; and _the statement implies that the Spirit, so understood, is RELATED TO THE CHURCH AS A WHOLE, as the Deity in Christ is related to His humanity. The writer, with all his vast powers, plainly knew not what he said, nor whereof he affirmed.

Such is modern Sabellianism as set forth by its greatest modern defender. It is fully discredited by the mere statement of the Scripture testimony that the Spirit's activity preceded the existence of what is known as the Christian Church.

To do justice to the school of Schleiermacher, among whose scholars there are many who have risen far above him in single points, it must be stated that it loyally adheres to historical Christianity, and maintains the foundation on which the Church has been supported from the beginning. They

362

who belong to it, however, are (1) neither acquainted with the true distinction between the work of Christ and the work of the Spirit, nor able to put them in their proper place and due relation to each other. or course they cannot do so, for they have no doctrine of the Spirit, and cannot make a due distinction between the work of Christ and the work of the Spirit on a Sabellian basis which denies His personality. Nor is this strange. For if the belief in a personal Holy Spirit naturally leads men to an admission of His supernatural works as something that belongs to Him in the divine economy, and especially to receive the inspired Scriptures as the standing monument of His activity, we may affirm, on the contrary, that a Sabellian view of the Spirit naturally leads men to the denial of the supernatural in any form.

(2) Another peculiarity of the Schleiermacher school is their watchword, THE CHRISTIAN CONSCIOUSNESS, OR THE TESTIMONY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT. They use both expressions, when in point of fact they, for the most part, have no personal Holy Ghost. They build on a Sabellian foundation, and yet retain the theological nomenclature in a sense entirely different from that which was usually accepted by their predecessors. What testimony of the Spirit can there be, and what Christian consciousness in any right sense of the expression can there be, without the regeneration of the Holy Ghost renewing the heart and occupying it by a true inhabitation? It can have no underlying reality, and amounts only to a figure of speech. Their whole style of thought on the Christian consciousness is a mere phrase, and a wholly unwarrantable use is made of it when it is made a test and judge of Scripture.

A few remarks will prove this. There is no Christian consciousness without a sense of SIN. But the school in question maintains tenets on the subject of sin which wholly undermine God's moral government, the nature and sanctions of the divine law, as well as the holy anger of God. This was expressed by Schleiermacher in an explicit denial of the fall and of sin.

363

Sin was made a law of being — a dogma that undermines all reference to God's justice, as well as all necessity for a propitiation. The Lord Jesus was, indeed, depicted in glowing terms as the source of life and light, of joy and strength, but not as the Eternal Son, and only as *a person inhabited by God in a wholly unique way*. We will not deny that many pleasing views are given forth by Schleiermacher and his school on the spiritual union between Jesus and His people, and on the indwelling presence of Christ. In reference, however, to the sinner's objective relation towards God there is a total blank; and even they who have advanced the farthest beyond their master's limits have but dim, undecided, and vacillating views on all the truths connected with man's acceptance with the Judge of all the earth. Schleiermacher's watchword was: *religion is feeling*. And carrying out this dogma, he everywhere asserts that doctrine is only an imperfect attempt to embrace in our conceptions the true, the infinite, and the eternal; that it is one-sided,

mutable, and liable to error; and that, while faith and religion are in all alike the same, *each one, after he has done his utmost to elaborate the truth in his own way, has merely his own individual representation of it.* Thus men, by wisdom, display the opposite of wisdom when they do not bow to the authority of the pure and perfect word of God.

Yet this so-called Christian consciousness is made the arbiter and judge of Scripture. If the Christian consciousness were definitely understood to be the sentiment of regenerate men, inhabited by the personal Holy Spirit, it would be entitled to some measure of respect. It would have much in common with Edwards' treatise on the Religious Affections, or with the subjective spirituality of the Puritans. As it is, it is natural feeling in many cases, not spiritual feeling; a mere public sentiment, wide enough to take in the consciousness of any man who is not an atheist — a Strauss or Renan. It does not presuppose regeneration by the Spirit.

364

The Bible does not regulate this Christian consciousness, but conversely the latter is used as the judge and arbiter of the Bible.

Nor (3) has this school any right conception of the Scriptures as the production of the personal Holy Ghost speaking by human agents. This also follows from the denial of a personal Holy Ghost. For any amount of free-thinking on the sacred Scriptures they are prepared, if only faith on the personal Redeemer and vital intercourse with Him can by any means be retained. Schleiermacher declared his deep conviction that faith in the revelation of God in Christ is nowise dependent on belief in a peculiar inspiration among the Jewish people up to a certain point; and he affirmed that nothing essential is lost thereby; that Christ remains the same, and faith in Him remains the same. All the scholars of Schleiermacher occupy the same unworthy relation to the Holy Scriptures.

The testimony of THE DUTCH CHURCH in behalf of the doctrine of the Spirit has, since the Synod of Dort, been always more clear and effective than that of Germany. During the last hundred years they have not contributed anything of much importance on the doctrine of the Spirit; and they are beginning to lose their independence to such a degree that they are content to register the last results of German thought and criticism. A few words will suffice to describe what has been done on the doctrine of the Spirit. At the close of last century, when Germany was beginning to surrender the divine Personality of the Spirit as they had surrendered His Work, we find a protest from Holland. Professor Clarisse prepared two interesting treatises, one in Latin and another in Dutch, in which he successfully asserted the Biblical doctrine of the Deity of the Holy Spirit (1795). After the formation of the Hague Society for the defence of the Christian religion, there appeared as answers to the prescribed subject essays of considerable merit on the Deity

365

of the Holy Spirit by Lotze, Corstius, and Beuzekamp. In 1838, Heyningen published a little treatise which he kept by him upwards of twenty years, after unsuccessfully offering it as one of the prize essays on the doctrine of the Bible respecting the work of the Holy Spirit. It is a useful work, but with a very flagrant defect. The defect is, that he abstains from pronouncing with the firm, decisive tone which is absolutely necessary on the point which draws the line between Augustinianism and Semi-Pelagianism. The reader peruses it and is at a loss *whether the author means that it is we or God that decisively wills the conversion of the soul.* No one can say whether, according to Heyningen, it is God in the first instance that works in us to will and to do. But the rest of the work is valuable. He maintains, from a Biblical evidence which cannot be shaken, that the operation of the Spirit is *distinct from the effect of the word*, though concurrent with God's providence and the preaching of the word. This is set forth in a clear and satisfactory light. When we come farther down we trace the growing influence of German thought on the

Dutch Church, and by no means to its advantage. Two prize essays prepared for the Hague Society appeared in 1844, the one by Thoden Van Velzen, the other by Stemler the Lutheran pastor at Hoorn. They are far from satisfactory. They give no testimony on the Personality of the Holy Spirit, which they leave in such absolute uncertainty that these writers can only be described as ignoring the subject; and what they say about the Spirit's Work is as vague and unmeaning as about His divine personality. The whole two volumes are occupied with a metaphysico-theologico-exegetical attempt to harmonize man's free agency with a certain influence which is not the regeneration of the Holy Ghost.

The SWISS and FRENCH CHURCHES of this century have produced very little on the doctrine of the Holy Spirit. Like the Church of Holland, which we have just noticed, these

366

Churches are losing their independence, and coming unduly under the spell of German theology and criticism. There are two interesting works, however, which have appeared in French Switzerland on the doctrine of the Spirit, one by E. Guers, Bern, another by Tophel in the form of five discourses, both written with warmth, devotional feeling, and unction. One point is very forcibly insisted on by Guers, the danger of the Spirit without the word, and of the word without the Spirit.

It is now time to bring this historical sketch to an end. And in doing so I have only to remark what Church history sufficiently verifies — that without a full testimony to the divine personality and agency of the Holy Spirit, no blessing can be expected on the ministrations of any Church. He is honoured by being invoked in every prayer, and by being referred to in every sermon. Wherever religion comes in power, the presence of the Spirit as connecting the Church on earth with Christ in heaven occupies a large place in the Church's consciousness and adorations. The doctrine of the Spirit not less than the doctrine of justification by faith in Christ's merits, is the article of a standing or falling Church, and without the recognition of it no religious prosperity exists or can exist.

This historical survey of past centuries, bringing successively under our notice epochs of Revival, such as the age of Augustine, the Reformation, and the great awakening of last century, naturally suggests a closing remark which may not be out of place. The Church of God is in her right attitude only when she is waiting for the fresh outpouring of the Holy Spirit, who comes from Christ and leads to Christ. We see combined in all successful preachers of the gospel right views of the Spirit's operations, an undiverted gaze upon the cross, and a proclamation of the fact that the Spirit comes to glorify the Son in His Person and in His offices. Thus we hear one exclaiming: "Spirit of preaching, that is, Spirit of

367

Christ, come down upon me,"¹ They have always set forth that spiritual life flows from the historical Christ the Surety through the Holy Ghost, and that though the Spirit comes not of necessity, but of free condescending love, He comes as the Spirit of our risen Lord, the organ by which He acts, the executive by whom He rules, the Comforter sent in Christ's name (Joh 16.13). And for the present sore and ulcerated condition of the Church, with many marked defects and perilous tendencies, nothing but a new effusion of the Spirit will avail. Many of these tendencies would be at once obviated by the efficacious presence of the Spirit. Of many currents which might be enumerated, the following three may be named, which all too plainly argue a want of the Spirit's power, viz. irreverent criticism of Scripture, sensuous Ritualism, and spasmodic efforts put forth to produce by human appliances what can only be effected by the Holy Spirit:

¹ The missionary Macdonald.

1. As to the bold criticism of Scripture, proceeding as it does on a denial of its inspiration by the Spirit, it has no significance and no attractions for a mind that has personally come under the supernatural and regenerating operations of the Spirit. Such a mind accepts on sufficient evidence without difficulty all the divine facts and prophecies — in other words, all the miracles of power and of knowledge with which Scripture is replete, but which the higher criticism, starting from a philosophy opposed to the supernatural, exerts itself to the utmost to explode.

2. As to the widespread Ritualism, it springs from a desire to substitute something sensuous for that which constitutes the true charm and glory of all religious ordinances — the presence and power of the Holy Spirit. It betrays an unrest, a want which the ritualist knows not how to relieve. To a mind replenished with the Holy Spirit, ritualistic elements have no interest or attraction.

3. With regard to the spasmodic efforts to awaken by human

368

appliances a religious interest in the minds of others, we must distinguish two things that differ. There is, on the one hand, a noble revival spirit, burning with a pure and steady flame, which is kindled and kept alive in proportion as the Holy Spirit inhabits and quickens the Christian heart to sustained and strenuous efforts for the salvation of others. It springs from the Spirit of grace: it leads to dependence on the Spirit's supernatural operations; and they who cherish it never forget that success is not by might nor by power, but by the Spirit of the Lord (Zec 4.6). But, on the other hand, there is effort of a different sort — spasmodic and fitful, from self and for self, arguing impatience at the slow progress of the kingdom of God, and prompting measures of the earth earthy. Impure and of a mixed character, it burns itself out; and is succeeded by despondency, exhaustion, and dissatisfaction. Wholly different are those efforts which are kindled by the Spirit and done in the strength of the Spirit. The effects are blessed and abiding to the glory of the Spirit's power and grace.

THE END.

MORRISON AND GIBB, EDINBURGH,
PRINTERS TO HER MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE.

I — INDEX TO TEXTS ELUCIDATED.

GENESIS.

1. 26, — 11, 14
2.2,—9
2.7,—10
6.3,—17
20.6, — 18
41.38, — 18

EXODUS.

4.16, — 21

NUMBERS.

11.17, — 18
27.18, — 18

DEUTERONOMY.

34.9, — 18

JUDGES.

3.10, — 20
6.34, — 20
14.19, — 20

1 SAMUEL.

16.13, — 24

2 SAMUEL.

23.2, — 24

2 KINGS.

9.7, — 21

2 CHRONICLES.

20.14, — 38
24.20, — 38

NEHEMIAH.

9.20, — 19
9.30, — 38

JOB.

26.13, — 9

33.4, — 10

PSALMS.

45.7, — 42
51.11, — 25
68.8, — 19
104.30, — 10
116.10, — 27
139.7, — 25
143.10, — 25

PROVERBS.

1.23, — 27

ISAIAH.

4.4, — 32
11.2, — 33
30.1, — 32
34.16, — 32
42.1, — 33
44.3, — 33
48.16, — 32
59. 19, — 35
59. 21, — 35
61.1, — 33
63.11-14, — 32

EZEKIEL.

2.2, — 36
2.14, — 36
8.3, — 36
11.24, — 36
36.25-27, — 36
37. 1, — 37

HOSEA.

9.7, — 21

JOEL.

2.28, — 28

MICAH.

2.7, — 31

3.8, — 31

HAGGAI.

2.5, — 37

ZECHARIAH.

4.6, — 38
12.10, — 38

MATTHEW.

3.11, — 41
12.18, — 34
12.32, — 183

LUKE.

1.42, — 41
1.67, — 41
2.25, — 41
4.17, 18, — 34

JOHN.

3.3-6, — 168
6.63, — 44
7.37-39, — 39
14 to 16, — 42
14.16, — 45
15.26, — 45
16.8-11, — 172
20. 22, — 46

ACTS.

1.14, — 47
2.16, — 30
2.38, — 30
4.31, — 55
6.3, — 56
9.31, — 56
11.24, — 56
16.6, — 56
20.23, — 57
28.25, — 57

ROMANS.

1.3, 4, — 72
5.5, — 72
8.2, — 73
8.4, 6, 9, 11, 15, — 58, 74-76
8.23, — 76
15.19, — 72

1 CORINTHIANS.

2.14, — 62
12.8-11, — 51

2 CORINTHIANS.

1. 21, — 67
3.3, — 68
3.6-18, — 64-67
4.13, — 63
5.6, — 69

GALATIANS.

3.3, — 69
3.14, — 70
4.6, — 70
5.16-25, — 71
6.1, — 58
6.6, — 71

EPHESIANS.

1.13, — 79
1.17, — 77
2.17, — 78
2.22, — 80
3.16, — 79
4.4, — 80
4.30, — 79

PHILIPPIANS.

1.19, — 81

3.3, — 82

COLOSSIANS.

1.8, — 83

1 THESSALONIANS.

1.5, — 83

4.8, — 84

5.19, — 84

2 THESSALONIANS.

2.13, — 84

1 TIMOTHY.

3.16, — 84

2 TIMOTHY.

1.7, — 58

1.14, — 85

TITUS.

3.5, — 58

HEBREWS.

1.9, — 85

2.4, — 85

6.4, — 85

9.14, — 85

10.29, — 85

JAMES.

4.5, 6, — 86

1 PETER.

1.11, — 18,88

3.18, — 88

3.19, — 17

4.14, — 88

2 PETER.

1.21, — 21

JUDE.

9, — 89

20, — 90

1 JOHN.

2.20, — 91

2.27, — 91

3.24, — 91, 92

4.2, — 91

4.13, — 92

5.6, — 91

REVELATION.

1.4, — 93

1.10, — 94

2.7, — 94

3. 1, — 93

4.2, — 93

4.5, — 93

II — INDEX TO SUBJECTS AND WRITERS,

- ABILITY, distinction between physical and moral, 197.
- Adoption of sons by the Spirit exhibited in various ways In Paul, John, and Synoptics, 192.
- Amyraldism, 322.
- Anointed One, the, 40; why needed, 129; the Son operating by the Spirit, 130.
- Arianism, 270, 317.
- Arminianism, 317.
- Attributes of the Spirit, divine, 110; omniscience, 111; creation of all, 110.
- Augustin's views of grace, 297, 308; quoted, 168.
- Awakening, the great, of last century, 249; peculiar mode of preaching, 253; and of praying, 254, 339.
- BAPTISMAL formula, 257; baptism of Christ, 127.
- CHURCH, one, in Old and New Testament, 242; a holy society and missionary institute, 244.
- Comforter, the, 101.
- Confessions, Lutheran and Reformed, 312.
- Congregationalist writers on the Spirit, 349.
- Constantinople, Council of, 276; troubled time between first and second Council, 273.
- Co-ordinate rank of the Spirit, 113.
- DEITY of the Spirit, 109; proof of, from name of God given Him, 114.
- Dorner's theory of incarnation without a fall, 13.
- Doxologies to Trinity, 258.
- EDWARDS' influence and opinions, 342.
- Epochs, three, in Greek Church on procession, 281.
- Erasmus on free-will, 309.
- Ethics, Christian, 212.
- Evans, J. H., work of, 350.
- FAITH, a dead, 202; spirit of, 191; Reformers' views of, 308.
- Fathers, defects of Greek, 263; difference between Greek and Latin, on grace, 292; testimony to inspiration, 262.
- Forfeiture of the Spirit, 200.
- Foster on prayer, 255.
- GIVER, the, of the Spirit, Christ, 41, 134.
- Gnostics, 98.
- Gregory Nazianzen's saying, 6.
- HOWE'S living temple, 14.
- IMMACULATE nature of Mary not necessary, 123.
- Inspiration, work of the Spirit in, 137 — 160.
- JUNCKHEIM'S treatise, effect and cause, 335.
- Justin Martyr, quotations from, 258.
- KAHNIS on the Spirit, 97, 357.
- LIFE, spiritual, 205.
- Luther, *de servo arbitrio*, 309.
- MACEDONIANISM, 273.
- Marcionites, and the formula against, 258.
- Mediate or immediate operation of the Spirit, 349.
- Ministry of the Spirit, 245.
- Miraculous gifts of the Spirit, 29, 50.
- Missions, success of, 347.
- Montanism, 269.
- OMNIPRESENCE of Spirit, 111.
- Orange, Synod of, 302.
- Owen, Dr., work of, 329.
- PAJONISM, 322.
- Pelagius and his system, 295.
- Person in the Trinity, 99.
- Personality of the Spirit, 95; proved, 103; less beheld than that of Christ at present, 10.
- Personification not used, 98; where it is found, 99.
- Presence of Christ in the Church along with the Spirit's activity, 237; presence of the Spirit, 210.
- Prevenient grace, 211.
- Procession, writers on, 290; doctrine of, 105; writers who deny it, 107; consequences of the denial, 109.
- REFORMATION view of grace, 308.
- Regeneration by the Spirit, 162, 187.
- Reinhard on the Spirit's efficacious grace, 338.
- Ritualism, 20.
- Sabellianism, 8, 267, 353.
- Sanctification of the Spirit, 219, 226; inward conflict, 227.
- Sandemanianism, 345.
- Satan, doctrine of, in Greek Church, 190.
- Schleiermacher, 8, 353.
- Schubert's Pajonism, 334.
- Semi-Pelagianism, 300.
- Semisich on Greek Fathers, 263.
- Spirit, Holy, import of, 105; restored by Christ's mediatorship alone, 163; His operation next to that of the Son, 120; inhabitation of, 206, 209.
- Spirit of faith, 191; operation on the will, 189; the Spirit's work not subsequent to the believing reception of Christ, 190; given through preaching the cross, 2.6; the Holy Spirit in the Church, 230.

- Spirit withdrawn at the fall, 164; Spirit of God,
import of, 99; the Spirit Christ's guide, 126.
- Storr's treatise on the Spirit, 338.
- Swiss writers on the Spirit, 366.
- Synergism, 314.
- TEMPLE of the Spirit, 10.
- Tendencies, modern, 366.
- Tertullian against Praxeas, 268.
- Testimony of the Spirit, 159; a false view of, 362.
- Tittmann's treatise on the Spirit, 338.
- UNCTION of the Spirit on Christ, 118; the three
grades, 121.
- Union, mystical, 207.
- Unitarian attack, 317.
- Unpardonable sin, different opinions, 183.
- WARBURTON, Bishop, doctrine of the Spirit,
331.
- Will, free, 167; how the Spirit anticipates, 198.
- Witness of the Spirit, or assurance, 193.
- Worship of the Spirit, 112.
- Writers who deny the Spirit's personality, 23,
268, 358.
- ZWINGLIANISM, 240.